THE

ADVENTURES

OF

PEREGRINE PICKLE.

IN WHICH ARE INCLUDED,

MEMOIRS OF A LADY OF QUALITY.

BY DR. SMOLLETT.

IN FOUR VOLUMES.

1218

Cooke's Edition.

EMBELLISHED WITH SUPERB ENGRAVINGS.

VOL. II.

Respicere exemplar vitæ morumque jubebo
Doctum imitatorem, et veras hinc ducere voces. Hor.

THE TANJORE MAHARAJA SERFOGI'S SARASWATI MAHAL.

London:
Printed for C. COOKE, No. 17, Paternoster-Row;
And sold by all the Booksellers in
Town and Country.

THE TANJORE ... MAHAL

THE

ADVENTURES

OF

PEREGRINE PICKLE.

1218

CHAP. I.

He embarks for France; is overtaken by a Storm; is ſurprized with the Appearance of Pipes; lands at Calais, and has an Affair with the Officers of the Cuſtom-houſe.

SCARCE had the veſſel proceeded two leagues on the paſſage, when the wind ſhifting, blew directly in their teeth; ſo that they were obliged to haul upon a wind, and alter their courſe. The ſea running pretty high at the ſame time, our hero, who was below in his cabbin, began to be ſqueamiſh, and in conſequence of the ſkipper's advice, went upon deck for the comfort of his ſtomach; while the governor, experienced in theſe diſaſters, ſlipped into bed, where he lay at his eaſe, amuſing himſelf with a treatiſe on the Cycloid, with algebraical demonſtrations, which never failed to engage his imagination in the moſt agreeable manner.

In the mean time the wind increaſed to a very hard gale, the veſſel pitched with great violence, the ſea waſhed over the decks, the maſter was alarmed, the crew were confounded, the paſſengers were overwhelmed with ſickneſs and fear, and univerſal diſtraction enſued. In the midſt of this uproar, Peregrine holding faſt by the taffrill, and looking carefully a-head, the countenance of Pipes preſented itſelf to his aſtoniſhed view, riſing as it were from the hold of the ſhip. At

first he imagined it was a fear-formed ſhadow of his own brain: though he did not long remain in this error, but plainly perceived it was no other than the real perſon of Thomas, who jumping on the quarter-deck, took charge of the helm, and dictated to the ſailors with as much authority as if he had been commander of the ſhip. The ſkipper looked upon him as an angel ſent to his aſſiſtance, and the crew ſoon diſcovering him to be a thorough-bred ſeaman, notwithſtanding his livery frock, obeyed his orders with ſuch alacrity, that in a little time the confuſion vaniſhed, and every neceſſary ſtep was taken to weather the gale.

Our young gentleman immediately conceived the meaning of Tom's appearance on board, and when the tumult was a little ſubſided, went up and encouraged him to exert himſelf for the preſervation of the ſhip, promiſing to take him again into his ſervice, from which he ſhould never be diſmiſſed, except at his own deſire. This aſſurance had a ſurprizing effect upon Pipes, who, though he made no manner of reply, thruſt the helm into the maſter's hand, ſaying—'Here, you old bum-boat woman, take hold of the tiller, and keep her thus boy, thus!' and ſkipped about the veſſel, trimming the ſails, and managing the ropes with ſuch agility and ſkill, that every body on deck ſtood amazed at his dexterity.

Mr. Jolter was far from being unconcerned at the uncommon motion of the veſſel, the ſinging of the wind, and the uproar which he heard above him; he looked towards the cabbin-door with the moſt fearful expectation, in hope of ſeeing ſome perſon who could give him ſome account of the weather, and what was doing upon deck; but not a ſoul appeared, and he was too well acquainted with the diſpoſition of his own bowels to make the leaſt alteration in his attitude. When he had lain a good while in all the agony of ſuſpenſe, the boy tumbled headlong into his apartment, with ſuch noiſe, that he believed the maſt had gone by the board, and ſtarting upright in his bed, aſked with all the ſymptoms

toms of horror, what was the cause of that disturbance. The boy, half stunned by his fall, answered in a dolorous tone—'I'm come to put up the dead-lights.' At mention of dead-lights, the meaning of which he did not understand, the poor governor's heart died within him; he shivered with despair. His recollection forsaking him, he fell upon his knees in the bed, and fixing his eyes upon the book which was in his hand, began to pronounce aloud with great fervour—'The time of a compleat oscillation in the cycloid, is to the time in which a body would fall through the axis of the cycloid D V, as the circumference of a circle to its diameter—' He would in all likelihood have proceeded with the demostration of this proposition, had he not been seized with such a qualm as compelled him to drop the book, and accommodate himself to the emergency of his distemper; he therefore stretched himself at full length, and putting up ejaculations to Heaven, began to prepare himself for his latter-end; when, all of a sudden, the noise above was intermitted, and he could not conceive the cause of this tremendous silence, he imagined that either the men were washed over-board, or that, despairing of safety, they had ceased to oppose the tempest. While he was harrowed by this miserable uncertainty, which, however was not altogether unenlightened by some scattered rays of hope, the master entered the cabbin; then he asked, with a voice half extinguished by fear, how matters went upon deck; and the skipper with a large bottle of brandy applied to his mouth, answered in a hollow tone—'All's over now, master.' Upon which Mr. Jolter, giving himself over for lost, exclaimed with the utmost horror—'Lord have mercy upon us! Christ have mercy upon us!' and repeated this supplication as it were mechanically, until the master undeceived him, by explaining the meaning of what he had said, and assuring him that the squall was over.

Such a sudden transition from fear to joy, occasioned a violent agitation both in his mind and body; and it

was a full quarter of an hour before he recovered the right uſe of his organs. By this time the weather cleared up, the wind began to blow again from the right corner, and the ſpires of Calais appeared at the diſtance of five leagues; ſo that the countenances of all on board were lighted up with joyous expectation; and Peregrine venturing to go down into the cabbin, comforted his governor with an account of the happy turn of their affairs.

Jolter, tranſported with the thought of a ſpeedy landing, began to launch out in praiſe of that country for which they were bound. He obſerved that France was the land of politeneſs and hoſpitality, which were conſpicuous in the behaviour of all ranks and degrees, from the peer to the peaſant; that a gentleman and a foreigner, far from being inſulted and impoſed upon by the lower claſs of people, as in England, was treated with the utmoſt reverence, candour and reſpect; that their fields were fertile, their climate pure and healthy, their farmers rich and induſtrious, and the ſubjects in general the happieſt of men. He would have proſecuted this favourite theme ſtill farther, had not his pupil been obliged to run upon deck, in conſequence of certain warnings he received from his ſtomach.

The ſkipper ſeeing his condition, very honeſtly reminded him of the cold ham and fowls, with a baſket of wine which he had ordered to be ſent on board, and aſked if he would have the cloth laid below. He could not have choſen a more ſeaſonable opportunity of manifeſting his own diſintereſtedneſs. Peregrine made wry faces at the mention of food, bidding him, for Chriſt's ſake, talk no more on that ſubject. He then deſcended into the cabbin, and put the ſame queſtion to Mr. Jolter, who, he knew, entertained the ſame abhorrence for his propoſal; and meeting with the like reception from him, went between decks, and repeated his courteous proffer to the valet de chambre and lacquey, who lay ſprawling in all the pangs of a double evacuation, and rejected his civility with the moſt horrible loathing.

Thus

Thus baffled in all his kind endeavours, he ordered his boy to ſecure the proviſion in one of his own lockers, according to the cuſtom of the ſhip.

It being low water when they arrived on the French coaſt, the veſſel could not enter the harbour, and they were obliged to bring to, and wait for a boat, which in leſs than half an hour came along ſide from the ſhore. Mr. Jolter now came upon deck; and ſnuffing up the French air with ſymptoms of infinite ſatisfaction, aſked of the boatmen, with the friendly appellation of, *mes enfans*, what they demanded for tranſporting him and his pupil, with their baggage, to the pier. But how was he diſconcerted when thoſe polite, candid, reaſonable watermen, demanded a Louis-d'or for that ſervice! Peregrine, with a ſarcaſtick ſneer, obſerved, that he already began to perceive the juſtice of his encomiums on the French; and the diſappointed governor could ſay nothing in his own vindication, but that they were debauched by their intercourſe with the inhabitants of Dover. His pupil, however, was ſo much offended at their extortion, that he abſolutely refuſed to employ them, even when they abated one half in their demand, and ſwore he would ſtay on board till the packet ſhould be able to enter the harbour, rather than encourage ſuch impoſition.

The maſter, who in all probability had ſome ſort of fellow feeling with the boatmen, in vain repreſented, that he could not with ſafety lie to, or anchor upon a lee-ſhore; our hero, having conſulted Pipes, anſwered, that he had hired his veſſel to tranſport him to Calais, and that he would oblige him to perform what he had undertaken. The ſkipper, very much mortified at this peremptory reply, which was not over and above agreeable to Mr. Jolter, diſmiſſed the boat, notwithſtanding the ſolicitations and condeſcenſion of the watermen. Running a little farther in ſhore, they came to an anchor, and waited till there was water enough to float them over the bar. Then they ſtood into the harbour; and our gentleman, with his attendants and baggage, were

were landed on the pier by the sailors, whom he liberally rewarded for their trouble.

He was immediately plied by a great number of porters; who, like so many hungry wolves, laid hold on his luggage, and began to carry it off piecemeal, without his order or direction. Incensed at this officious insolence, he commanded them to desist, with many oaths and opprobrious terms that his anger suggested; and perceiving that one of them did not seem to pay any regard to what he said, but marched off with his burden, he snatched a cudgel out of his lacquey's hand, and overtaking the fellow in a twinkling, brought him to the ground with one blow. He was instantly surrounded by the whole congregation of this *canaille*, who resented the injury which their brother had sustained, and would have taken immediate satisfaction of the aggressor, had not Pipes, seeing his master involved, brought the whole crew to his assistance, and exerted himself so manfully, that the enemy were obliged to retreat with many marks of defeat, and menaces of interesting the commandant in their quarrel. Jolter, who knew and dreaded the power of the French governor, began to shake with apprehension, when he heard their repeated threats: but they durst not apply to this magistrate; who, upon a fair representation of the case, would have punished them severely for their rapacious and insolent behaviour. Peregrine, without farther molestation, availed himself of his own attendants, who shouldered his baggage, and followed him to the gate; where they were stopped by the centinels, until their names should be registered.

Mr. Jolter, who had undergone this examination before, resolved to profit by his experience, and cunningly represented his pupil as a young English lord. This intimation, supported by the appearance of his equipage, was no sooner communicated to the officer, than he turned out the guard, and ordered his soldiers to rest upon their arms, while his lordship passed in great state to the *Lion d'Argent*, where he took up his lodging for the

the night, refolving to fet out for Paris next morning in a poft-chaife.

The governor triumphed greatly in this piece of complaifance and refpect with which they had been honoured, and refumed his beloved topick of difcourfe, in applauding the method and fubordination of the French government, which was better calculated for maintaining order, and protecting the people, than any conftitution upon earth. Of their courteous attention to ftrangers, there needed no other proof than the compliment which had been paid to them, together with the governor's connivance at Peregrine's employing his own fervants in carrying the baggage to the inn, contrary to the privilege of the inhabitants.

While he expatiated with a remarkable degree of felf-indulgence on this fubject, the valet de chambre coming into the room, interrupted his harangue, by telling his mafter, that their trunks and portmanteaus muft be carried to the cuftom-houfe, in order to be fearched, and fealed with lead, which muft remain untouched until their arrival at Paris.

Peregrine made no objection to this practice, which was in itfelf reafonable enough; but when he underftood that the gate was befieged by another multitude of porters, who infifted upon their right of carrying the goods, and alfo of fixing their own price, he abfolutely refufed to comply with their demand. Nay, he chaftifed fome of the moft clamorous among them with his foot, and told them, that if their cuftom-houfe officers had a mind to examine his baggage, they might come to the inn for that purpofe. The valet de chambre was abafhed at this boldnefs of his mafter's behaviour, which the lacquey, fhrugging up his fhoulders, obferved was *bien à l'Anglaife*; while the governor reprefented it as an indignity to the whole nation, and endeavoured to perfuade his pupil to comply with the cuftom of the place. But Peregrine's natural haughtinefs of difpofition hindered him from giving ear to Jolter's wholefome advice; and in lefs than half an

hour

hour they observed a file of musqueteers marching up to the gate. At sight of this detachment the tutor trembled, the valet grew pale, and the lacquey crossed himself; but our hero, without exhibiting any other symptoms than those of indignation, met them on the threshold, and with a ferocious air demanded their business. The corporal who commanded the file answered with great deliberation, that he had orders to convey his baggage to the custom-house; and seeing the trunks standing in the entry, placed his men between them and the owner, while the porters that followed took them up, and proceeded to the Douane without opposition.

Pickle was not mad enough to dispute the authority of this message: but, in order to gall, and specify his contempt for those who brought it, he called aloud to his valet, desiring him, in French, to accompany his things, and see that none of his linen and effects should be stolen by the searchers. The corporal, mortified at this satirical insinuation, darted a look of resentment at the author, as if he had been interested for the glory of his nation; and told him, that he could perceive he was a stranger in France, or else he would have saved himself the trouble of such a needless precaution.

CHAP. II.

He makes a fruitless Attempt in Gallantry; departs for Boulogne, where he spends the Evening with certain English Exiles.

HAVING thus yielded to the hand of power, he enquired if there was any other English company in the house; when understanding that a gentleman and lady lodged in the next apartment, and had bespoke a post-chaise for Paris, he ordered Pipes to ingratiate himself with their footman, and, if possible, learn their names and condition, while he and Mr. Jolter, attended by the lacquey, took a turn round the ramparts, and viewed the particulars of the fortifications.

Tom was so very successful in his inquiry, that when his master returned, he was able to give him a very satisfactory account of his fellow-lodgers, in consequence

ſequence of having treated his brother with a bottle of wine. The people in queſtion were a gentleman and his lady lately arrived from England, in their way to Paris. The huſband was a man of good fortune, who had been a libertine in his youth, and a profeſſed declaimer againſt matrimony. He wanted neither ſenſe nor experience: and piqued himſelf in particular upon his art of avoiding the ſnares of the female ſex, in which he pretended to be deeply verſed. But, notwithſtanding all his caution and ſkill, he had lately fallen a ſacrifice to the attractions of an oyſter-wench, who had found means to decoy him into the bands of wedlock; and, in order to evade the compliments and congratulations of his friends and acquaintance, he had come ſo far on a tour to Paris, where he intended to initate his ſpouſe in the *beau monde*. In the mean time he choſe to live upon the reſerve, becauſe her natural talents had as yet received but little cultivation; and he had not the moſt implicit confidence in her virtue and diſcretion, which, it ſeems, had like to have yielded to the addreſſes of an officer at Canterbury, who had made ſhift to inſinuate himſelf into her acquaintance and favour.

Peregrine's curioſity being inflamed by this information, he lounged about the yard, in hopes of ſeeing the dulcinea who had captivated the old batchelor; and at length obſerving her at a window, took the liberty of bowing to her with great reſpect. She returned the compliment with a curtſey, and appeared ſo decent in her dreſs and manner, that unleſs he had been previouſly informed of her former life and converſation, he never would have dreamed that her education was different from that of other ladies of faſhion; ſo eaſy is it to acquire that external deportment on which people of condition value themſelves ſo much. Not but that Mr. Pickle pretended to diſtinguiſh a certain vulgar audacity in her countenance, which in a lady of birth and fortune would have paſſed for an agreeable vivacity, that enlivens the aſpect, and gives poignancy to every feature; but as ſhe poſſeſſed a pair of fine eyes, and a clear complexion

plexion overspread with the glow of health, which never fails of recommending the owner, he could not help gazing at her with desire, and forming the design of making a conquest of her heart. With this view he sent his compliments to her husband, whose name was Hornbeck, with an intimation, that he proposed to set out next day for Paris; and as he understood that he was resolved upon the same journey, he should be extremely glad of his company on the road, if he was not better engaged. Hornbeck, who in all probability did not chuse to accommodate his wife with a squire of our hero's appearance, sent a civil answer to his message, professing infinite mortification at his being unable to embrace the favour of this kind offer, by reason of the indisposition of his wife, who, he was afraid, would not be in a condition for some days to bear the fatigue of travelling. This rebuff, which Peregrine ascribed to the husband's jealousy, stifled his project in embryo: he ordered his French servant to take a place for himself in the diligence, where all his luggage was stowed, except a small trunk with some linen and other necessaries, that was fixed upon the post-chaise which they hired of the landlord; and early next morning he and Mr. Jolter departed from Calais, attended by his valet de chambre and Pipes, on horseback. They proceeded without any accident as far as Boulogne, where they breakfasted and visited old father Graham, a Scottish gentleman of the governor's acquaintance, who had lived as a capuchin in that place for the space of threescore years, and during that period conformed to all the austerities of the order with the most rigorous exactness; being equally remarkable for the frankness of his conversation, the humanity of his disposition, and the simplicity of his manners. From Boulogne they took their departure about noon, and as they proposed to sleep that night at Abbé Ville, commanded the postillion to drive with extraordinary speed. Perhaps it was well for his cattle that the axle-tree gave way, and

the

the chaiſe of courſe overturned, before they had travelled one third part of the ſtage.

This accident compelled them to return to the place from whence they ſet out; and as they could not procure another convenience, they found themſelves under the neceſſity of ſtaying till their chaiſe could be refitted. Underſtanding that this operation would detain them a whole day, our young gentleman had recourſe to his patience, and demanded to know what they would have for dinner; the *garcon* or waiter thus queſtioned, vaniſhed in a moment, and immediately they were ſurprized with the appearance of a ſtrange figure, which, from the extravagance of its dreſs and geſticulation, Peregrine miſtook for a madman of the growth of France. This phantom, (which, by the bye, happened to be no other than the cook) was a tall, long-legged, meagre, ſwarthy fellow, that ſtooped very much: his cheek-bones were remarkably raiſed, his noſe bent into the ſhape and ſize of a powder-horn, and the ſockets of his eyes as raw round the edges as if the ſkin had been pared off. On his head he wore an handkerchief, which had once been white, and now ſerved to cover the upper part of a black periwig, to which was attached a bag, at leaſt a foot ſquare, with a ſolitaire and roſe that ſtuck upon each ſide to his ear; ſo that he looked like a criminal on the pillory. His back was accommodated with a linen waiſtcoat, his hands adorned with long ruffles of the ſame piece; his middle was girded by an apron tucked up, that it might not conceal his white ſilk ſtockings rolled; and at his entrance he brandiſhed a bloody weapon full three feet in length. Peregrine, when he firſt ſaw him approach in this menacing attitude, put himſelf upon his guard; but being informed of his quality, peruſed his bill of fare, and having beſpoke three or four things for dinner, walked out with Mr. Jolter to view both towns, which they had not leiſure to conſider minutely before. In their return from the harbour they met with four or five gentlemen, all of whom ſeemed to look with an air of

dejection, and perceiving our hero and his governor to be Engliſh by their dreſs, bowed with great reſpect as they paſſed. Pickle, who was naturally compaſſionate, felt an emotion of ſympathy; and ſeeing a perſon, who by his habit he judged to be one of their ſervants, accoſted him in Engliſh, and aſked who the gentlemen were. The lacquey gave him to underſtand that they were his own countrymen, exiled from their native homes, in conſequence of their adherence to an unfortunate and ruined cauſe; and that they were gone to the ſea-ſide, according to their daily practice, in order to indulge their longing eyes with a proſpect of the white cliffs of Albion, which they muſt never more approach.

Though our young gentleman differed widely from them in point of political principles, he was not one of thoſe enthuſiaſts, who look upon every ſchiſm from the eſtabliſhed articles of faith as damnable, and exclude the ſceptick from every benefit of humanity and Chriſtian forgiveneſs: he could eaſily comprehend how a man of the moſt unblemiſhed morals might, by the prejudice of education, or indiſpenſible attachments, be engaged in ſuch a blame-worthy and pernicious undertaking; and thought that they had already ſuffered ſeverely for their imprudence. He was affected with the account of their diurnal pilgrimage to the ſea-ſide, which he conſidered as a pathetick proof of their affliction, and inveſted Mr. Jolter with the agreeable office of going to them with a compliment in his name, and begging the honour of drinking a glaſs with them in the evening. They accepted the propoſal with great ſatisfaction and reſpectful acknowledgment, and in the afternoon waited upon the kind inviter, who treated them with coffee, and would have detained them to ſupper; but they intreated the favour of his company at the houſe which they frequented ſo earneſtly, that he yielded to their ſolicitations, and with his governor was conducted by them to the place, where they had

provided

provided an elegant repaſt, and regaled them with ſome of the beſt claret in France.

It was eaſy for them to perceive that their principal gueſt was no favourer of their ſtate maxims, and therefore they induſtriouſly avoided every ſubject of converſation which could give the leaſt offence; not but that they lamented their own ſituation, which cut them off from all their deareſt connections, and doomed them to perpetual baniſhment from their families and friends: but they did not, even by the moſt diſtant hint, impeach the juſtice of that ſentence by which they were condemned; although one among them, who ſeemed to be about the age of thirty, wept bitterly over his misfortune, which had involved a beloved wife and three children in miſery and diſtreſs; and in the impatience of his grief, curſed his own fate with frantick imprecations. His companions, with a view of beguiling his ſorrow, and manifeſting their own hoſpitality at the ſame time, changed the topick of diſcourſe, and circulated the bumpers with great aſſiduity; ſo that all their cares were overwhelmed and forgotten, ſeveral drinking French catches were ſung, and mirth and good fellowſhip prevailed.

In the midſt of this elevation, which commonly unlocks the moſt hidden ſentiment, and diſpels every conſideration of caution and reſtraint, one of the entertainers being more intoxicated than his fellows, propoſed a toaſt, to which Peregrine with ſome warmth excepted, as an unmannerly inſult. The other maintained his propoſition with indecent heat; and the diſpute beginning to grow very ſerious, the company interpoſed, and gave judgment againſt their friend, who was ſo keenly reproached and rebuked for his impolite behaviour, that he retired in high dudgeon, threatening to relinquiſh their ſociety, and branding them with the appellation of apoſtates from the common cauſe. Mortified at the behaviour of their companion, thoſe that remained were earneſt in their apologies to their gueſts, whom they beſought to forgive his intemperance, aſſuring them

them with great confidence that, he would, upon the recovery of his reflection, wait upon them in person, and ask pardon for the umbrage he had given. Pickle was satisfied with their remonstrances, resumed his good humour, and the night being pretty far advanced, resisted all their importunities with which he was intreated to see another bottle go round, and was escorted to his own lodgings more than half seas over. Next morning about eight o'clock, he was waked by his valet de chambre, who told him that two of the gentlemen with whom he had spent the evening were in the house, and desired the favour of being admitted into his chamber. He could not conceive the meaning of this extraordinary visit, and ordering his man to shew them into his apartment, beheld the person who had affronted him enter with the gentleman who had reprehended his rudeness.

He who had given the offence, after having made an apology for disturbing Mr. Pickle, told him that his friend there present had been with him early that morning, and proposed the alternative of either fighting with him immediately, or coming to beg pardon for his unmannerly deportment over night; that though he had courage enough to face any man in the field in a righteous cause, he was not so brutal as to disobey the dictates of his own duty and reflection, in consequence of which, and not out of any regard to the other's menaces, which he despised, he had now taken the liberty of interrupting his repose, that he might, as soon as possible, atone for the injury he had done him, which he protested was the effect of intoxication alone, and begged his forgiveness accordingly. Our hero accepted of this acknowledgment very graciously, thanked the other gentleman for the gallant part he had acted in his behalf; and perceiving that his companion was a little irritated at his officious interposition, effected a reconciliation, by convincing him that what he had done was for the honour of the company. He then kept them to breakfast, expressed a desire of seeing their situation altered for the better;

better; and the chaise being repaired, took leave of his entertainers, who came to wish him a good journey, and with his attendants left Boulogne for the second time.

CHAP. III.

Proceeds for the Capital. Takes up his Lodging at Bernay, where he is overtaken by Mr. Hornbeck, whose Head he longs to fortify.

DURING this day's expedition, Mr. Jolter took an opportunity of imparting to his pupil the remarks he had made upon the industry of the French, as an undeniable proof of which he bid him cast his eyes around, and observe with what care every spot of ground was cultivated; and from the fertility of that province, which is reckoned the poorest in France, conceive the wealth and affluence of the nation in general. Peregrine, amazed as well as disgusted at this infatuation, answered, that what he had ascribed to industry was the effect of mere wretchedness; the miserable peasants being obliged to plough up every inch of ground to satisfy their oppressive landlords, while they themselves and their cattle looked like so many images of famine; that their extreme poverty was evident from the face of the country, on which there was not one inclosure to be seen, or any other object, except scanty crops of barley and oats, which could never reward the toil of the husbandman; that their habitations were no better than paltry huts; that in twenty miles of extent, not one gentleman's house appeared; that nothing was more abject and forlorn than the attire of their country people; that the equipage of their travelling chaises was infinitely inferior to that of a dung-cart in England; and that the postillion who then drove their carriage, had neither stockings to his legs, nor a shirt to his back.

The governor finding his charge so intractable, resolved to leave him in the midst of his own ignorance and prejudice, and reserve his observations for those who would pay more deference to his opinion: and in-

deed this reſolution he had often made, and as often broke, in the tranſports of his zeal, that frequently hurried him out of the plan of conduct which in his cooler moments he had laid down. They halted for a refreſhment at Montreuil, and about ſeven in the evening arrived at a village called Bernay, where while they waited for freſh horſes, they were informed by the landlord, that the gates of Abbé Ville were ſhut every night punctually at eight o'clock; ſo that it would be impoſſible for them to get admittance. He ſaid, there was not another place of entertainment on the road where they could paſs the night; and therefore, as a friend, he adviſed them to ſtay at his houſe, where they would find the beſt of accommodation, and proceed upon their journey betimes in the morning.

Mr. Jolter, though he had travelled on that road before, could not recollect whether or not mine hoſt ſpoke truth; but his remonſtrance being very plauſible, our hero determined to follow his advice, and being conducted into an apartment, aſked what they could have for ſupper. The landlord mentioned every thing that was eatable in the houſe, and the whole being engroſſed for the uſe of him and his attendants, he amuſed himſelf till ſuch time as it ſhould be dreſſed, in ſtrolling about the houſe, which ſtands in a very rural ſituation. While he thus loitered away the time that hung heavy on his hands, another chaiſe arrived at the inn; and, upon inquiry, he found that the new comers were Mr. Hornbeek and his lady. The landlord, conſcious of his inability to entertain this ſecond company, came and begged with great humiliation that Mr. Pickle would ſpare them ſome part of the victuals he had beſpoke; but he refuſed to part with ſo much as the wing of a partridge; though, at the ſame time, he ſent his compliments to the ſtrangers, and giving them to underſtand how ill the houſe was provided for their reception, invited them to partake of his ſupper. Mr. Hornbeck, who was not deficient in point of politeneſs, and extremely well diſpoſed for a reliſhing meal, which he had reaſon to

expect

expect from the favoury fteam that iffued from the kitchen, could not refift this fecond inftance of our young gentleman's civility, which he acknowledged by a meffage, importing, that he and his wife would do themfelves the pleafure of profiting by his courteous offer. Peregrine's cheeks glowed when he found himfelf on the eve of being acquainted with Mrs. Hornbeck, of whofe heart he had already made a conqueft in imagination; and he forthwith fet his invention at work, to contrive fome means of defeating her hufband's vigilance.

When fupper was ready, he in perfon gave notice to his gueft, and leading the lady to his apartment, feated her in an elbow-chair at the upper end of the table, fqueezing her hand, and darting a moft infidious glance at the fame time. This abrupt behaviour he practifed, on the prefumption that a lady of her breeding was not to be addreffed with the tedious forms that muft be obferved in one's advances to a perfon of birth and genteel education. In all probability his calculation was juft, for Mrs. Hornbeck gave no figns of difcontent on this fort of treatment; but, on the contrary, feemed to confider it as a proof of the young gentleman's regard; and though fhe did not venture to open her mouth three times during the whole repaft, fhe fhewed herfelf particularly well fatisfied with her entertainer, by fundry fly and fignificant looks, while her hufband's eyes were directed another way, and divers loud peals of laughter, fignifying her approbation of the fallies which he uttered in the courfe of their converfation. Her fpoufe began to be very uneafy at the frank demeanor of his yoke-fellow, whom he endeavoured to check in her vivacity, by affuming a feverity of afpect; but whether fhe obeyed the dictates of her own difpofition, which, perhaps, was merry and unreferved, or wanted to punifh Mr. Hornbeck for his jealoufy of temper, certain it is, her gaiety increafed to fuch a degree, that her hufband was grievoufly alarmed and incenfed at her conduct, and refolved to make her fenfible of his difpleafure,

fure,

ſure, by treading in ſecret upon her toes. He was, however, ſo diſconcerted by his indignation, that he miſtook his mark, and applied the ſharp heel of his ſhoe to the ſide of Mr. Jolter's foot, comprehending his little toe that was ſtudded with an angry corn, which he invaded with ſuch a ſudden jerk, that the governor, unable to endure the torture in ſilence, ſtarted up, and dancing on the floor, roared hideouſly with repeated bellowings, to the unſpeakable enjoyment of Peregrine and the lady, who laughed themſelves almoſt into convulſions at the joke. Hornbeck, confounded at the miſtake he had committed, begged pardon of the injured tutor with great contrition, proteſting that the blow he had ſo unfortunately received, was intended for an ugly cur, which he thought had poſted himſelf under the table. It was lucky for him that there was actually a dog in the room, to juſtify this excuſe, which Jolter admitted with the tears running over his cheeks, and the œconomy of the table was recompoſed.

As ſoon, however, as the ſtrangers could with decency withdraw, this ſuſpicious huſband took his leave of the youth, on pretence of being fatigued with his journey, after having, by way of compliment, propoſed that they ſhould travel together next day; and Peregrine handed the lady to her chamber, where he wiſhed her good night with another warm ſqueeze, which ſhe returned. This favourable hint made his heart bound with a tranſport of joy; he lay in wait for an opportunity of declaring himſelf, and ſeeing the huſband go down into the yard with a candle, glided ſoftly into his apartment, where he found her almoſt undreſſed. Impelled by the impetuoſity of his paſſion, which was ſtill more enflamed by her preſent luſcious appearance, and encouraged by the approbation ſhe had already expreſſed, he ran towards her with eagerneſs, crying—'Zounds, Madam! your charms are irreſiſtible!' and without farther ceremony would have claſped her in his arms, had ſhe not begged him for the love of God to retire, for ſhould Mr. Hornbeck return and find him there,

there, she would be undone for ever. He was not so blinded by his passion, but that he saw the reasonableness of her fear, and as he could not pretend to crown his wishes at that interview, he avowed himself her lover, assured her that he would exhaust his whole invention in finding a proper opportunity for throwing himself at her feet; and in the mean time he ravished sundry small favours, which she in the hurry of her fright could not withold from his impudence of address. Having thus happily settled the preliminaries, he withdrew to his own chamber, and spent the whole night in contriving stratagems to elude the jealous caution of his fellow-traveller.

CHAP. IV.

They set out in Company, breakfast at Abbé Ville, dine at Amiens, and about eleven o'Clock arrive at Chantilly, where Peregrine executes a Plan which he had concerted upon Hornbeck.

THE whole company by agreement rose and departed before day, and breakfasted at Abbé Ville, where they became acquainted with the finesse of their Bernay landlord, who had imposed upon them, in affirming that they would not have been admitted after the gates were shut. From thence they proceeded to Amiens, where they dined and were pestered by begging friars; and the roads being deep, it was eleven o'clock at night before they reached Chantilly, where they found supper already dressed, in consequence of having dispatched the valet de chambre before them on horseback.

The constitution of Hornbeck being very much impaired by a life of irregularity, he found himself so fatigued with his day's journey, which amounted to upwards of an hundred miles, that when he sat down at table, he could scarce sit upright; and in less than three minutes began to nod in his chair. Peregrine, who had foreseen and provided for this occasion, advised him to exhilarate his spirits with a glass of wine; and the proposal being embraced, tipped his valet de chambre the wink; who, according to the instructions he

he had received, qualified the Burgundy with thirty drops of laudanum, which this unfortunate huſband ſwallowed in one glaſs. The doſe co-operating with his former drowſineſs, lulled him ſo faſt aſleep, as it were inſtantaneouſly, that it was found neceſſary to convey him to his own chamber, where his footman undreſſed and put him to bed. Nor was Jolter (naturally of a ſluggiſh diſpoſition) able to reſiſt his propenſity to ſleep, without ſuffering divers dreadful yawns, which encouraged his pupil to adminiſter the ſame doſe to him, which had operated ſo powerfully on the other Argus. This cordial had not ſuch a gentle effect upon the rugged organs of Jolter, as upon the more delicate nerves of Hornbeck: but diſcovered itſelf in certain involuntary ſtartings, and convulſive motions in the muſcles of his face; and when his nature at length yielded to the power of this medicine, he ſounded the trumpet ſo loud through his noſtrils, that our adventurer was afraid the noiſe would wake his other patient, and conſequently prevent the accompliſhment of his aim. The governor was therefore committed to the care of Pipes, who lugged him into the next room, and having ſtripped off his cloaths, tumbled him into his neſt, while the two lovers remained at full liberty to indulge their mutual paſſion.

Peregrine, in the impatience of his inclination, would have finiſhed the fate of Hornbeck immediately; but his inamorata diſapproved of his intention, and repreſented that their being together by themſelves for any length of time, would be obſerved by her ſervant, who was kept as a ſpy upon her actions; ſo that they had recourſe to another ſcheme, which was executed in this manner: he conducted her into her own apartment, in preſence of her footman, who lighted them thither, and wiſhing her good reſt, returned to his own chamber, where he waited till every thing was quiet in the houſe; then ſtealing ſoftly to her door, which had been left open for his admiſſion in the dark, he found the huſband ſtill ſecure in the embraces of

ſleep,

ſleep, and the lady in a looſe gown, ready to ſeal his happineſs. He conveyed her to his own chamber; but his guilty paſſion was not gratified.

The opium which had been given to Jolter, together with the wine he had drank, produced ſuch a perturbation in his fancy, that he was viſited with horrible dreams, and among other miſerable ſituations, imagined himſelf in danger of periſhing in the flames, which he thought had taken hold on his apartment. This viſion made ſuch an impreſſion on his faculties, that he alarmed the whole houſe with the repeated cries of 'Fire! fire!' and even leaped out of his bed, though he ſtill continued faſt aſleep. The lovers were very diſagreeably diſturbed by this dreadful exclamation; and Mrs. Hornbeck running in great confuſion to the door, had the mortification to ſee the footman, with a light in his hand, enter her huſband's chamber in order to give him notice of this accident. She knew that ſhe would be inſtantly miſſed, and could eaſily divine the conſequence, unleſs her invention could immediately trump up ſome plauſible excuſe for her abſence.

Women are naturally fruitful of expedients in caſes of ſuch emergency; ſhe employed but a few ſeconds in recollection, and ruſhing directly towards the apartment of the governor, who ſtill continued to halloo in the ſame note, exclaimed in a ſcreaming tone, 'Lord have mercy upon us! where! where!' By this time, all the ſervants were aſſembled in ſtrange attire: Peregrine burſt into Jolter's room, and ſeeing him ſtalking in his ſhirt with his eyes ſhut, beſtowed ſuch a ſlap on his back, as in a moment diſſolved his dream, and reſtored him to the uſe of his ſenſes. He was aſtoniſhed and aſhamed at being diſcovered in ſuch an indecent attitude; and taking refuge under the cloaths, aſked pardon of all preſent for the diſturbance he had occaſioned; ſoliciting, with great humility, the forgiveneſs of the lady, who to a miracle counterfeited the utmoſt agitation of terror and ſurprize. Meanwhile, Hornbeck being awakened by the repeated efforts of his man, no

ſooner

fooner underftood that his wife was miffing, than all the chimeras of jealoufy taking poffeffion of his imagination, he ftarted up in a fort of phrenzy; and fnatching his fword, flew ftraight to Peregrine's chamber; where, though he found not that which he looked for, he unluckily perceived an under-petticoat, which his wife had forgot in the hurry of her retreat. This difcovery added fuel to the flame of his refentment. He feized the fatal proof of his dishonour, and meeting his fpoufe in her return to bed, prefented it to her view, faying, with a moft expreffive countenance, 'Madam, you have dropped your under petticoat in the next room.' Mrs. Hornbeck, who inherited from nature a moft admirable prefence of mind, looked earneftly at the object in queftion, and with incredible ferenity of countenance, affirmed that the petticoat muft belong to the houfe, for fhe had none fuch in her poffeffion. Peregrine, who walked behind her, hearing this affeveration, immediately interpofed; and pulling Hornbeck by the fleeve into his chamber 'Gadzooks!' faid he, 'what bufinefs had you with that petticoat! Can't you let a young fellow enjoy a little amour with an innkeeper's daughter, without expofing his infirmities to your wife? Pfhaw! that's fo malicious; becaufe you have quitted thefe adventures yourfelf, to fpoil the fport of other people!' The poor hufband was fo confounded at the effrontery of his wife, and this cavalier declaration of the young man, that his faith began to waver; he diftrufted his own confcious diffidence of temper, which, that he might not expofe, he expreffed no doubts of Peregrine's veracity, but afking pardon for the miftake he had committed, retired. He was not yet fatisfied with the behaviour of his ingenious help-mate; but, on the contrary, determined to enquire more minutely into the circumftances of this adventure; which turned out fo little to his fatisfaction, that he ordered his fervant to get every thing ready for his departure by break of day; and when our adventurer rofe next morning, he found that his fellow-travellers were gone

above

COOKE'S POCKET EDITION OF SELECT NOVELS.

PEREGRINE PICKLE. VOL. II. Ch. 4. P. 24.
Hornbeck shewing his Wife her Petticoat, which he had found in Peregrine's Chamber.

R. Corbould, delin. Paternoster Row, Sept. 27, 1794. J. Saunders, sculp.

above three hours, though they agreed to ſtay all the forenoon, with a view of ſeeing the Prince of Condé's palace, and to proceed all together for Paris in the afternoon.

Peregrine was a little chagrined, when he underſtood that he was ſo ſuddenly deprived of this untaſted morſel; and Jolter could not conceive the meaning of their abrupt and uncivil diſappearance; which, af er many profound conjectures, he accounted for, by ſuppoſing that Hornbeck was ſome ſharper who had run away with an heireſs, whom he found it neceſſary to conceal from the enquiry of her friends.

The pupil, who was well aſſured of the true motive, allowed his governor to enjoy the triumph of his own penetration, and conſoled himſelf with the hope of ſeeing his dulcinea again at ſome of the publick places in Paris, which he propoſed to frequent. Thus comforted, he viſited the magnificent ſtables and palace of Chantilly; and immediately after dinner ſet out for Paris, where they arrived in the evening, and hired apartments at an hotel in the Fauxbourgh St. Germaine, not far from the playhouſe.

CHAP. V.

He is involved in an Adventure at Paris, and taken Priſoner by the City Guard, becomes acquainted with a French Nobleman, who introduces him in the Beau Monde.

THEY were no ſooner ſettled in theſe lodgings, than our hero wrote to his uncle an account of their ſafe arrival; and ſent another letter to his friend Gauntlet, with a very tender billet incloſed for his dear Emilia, to whom he repeated all his former vows of conſtancy and love.

The next care that engroſſed him, was that of beſpeaking ſeveral ſuits of cloaths ſuitable for the French mode; and in the mean time he never appeared abroad, except in the Engliſh coffee-houſe, where he ſoon became acquainted with ſome of his own countrymen, who were at Paris on the ſame footing with himſelf.

The third evening after his journey, he was engaged in a party of thofe young fparks, at the houfe of a noted traiteur, whofe wife was remarkably handfome, and otherwife extremely well qualified for alluring cuftomers to her houfe. To this lady our young gentleman was introduced as a ftranger frefh from England; and he was charmed with her perfonal accomplifhments, as well as with the freedom and gaiety of her converfation. Her frank deportment perfuaded him that fhe was one of thofe kind creatures, who granted favours to the beft bidder; on this fuppofition he began to be fo importunate in his addreffes, that the fair Bourgeoife was compelled to cry aloud in defence of her own virtue. Her hufband ran immediately to her affiftance, and finding her in a very alarming fituation, flew upon her ravifher with fuch fury, that he was fain to quit his prey, and turn againft the exafperated traiteur, whom he punifhed without mercy for his impudent intrufion. The lady feeing her yoke-fellow treated with fo little refpect, efpoufed his caufe; and fixing her nails in his antagonift's face, fcarified all one fide of his nofe. The noife of this encounter brought all the fervants of the houfe to the refcue of their mafter; and Peregrine's company oppofing them, a general battle enfued, in which the French were totally routed, the wife infulted, and the hufband kicked down ftairs.

The publican, enraged at the indignity which had been offered to him and his family, went out into the ftreet, and implored the protection of the guet, or city guard; which, having heard his complaint, fixed their bayonets, and furrounded the door, to the number of twelve or fourteen. The young gentlemen, flufhed with their fuccefs, and confidering the foldiers as fo many London watchmen, whom they had often put to flight, drew their fwords, and fallied out, with Peregrine at their head. Whether the guard refpected them as foreigners, or inexperienced youths intoxicated with liquor, they opened to right and left, and gave them room to pafs without oppofition. This complaifance,

ſance, which was the effect of compaſſion, being miſ-interpreted by the Engliſh leader, he, out of mere wantonneſs, attempted to trip up the heels of the ſoldier that ſtood next him, but failed in the execution, and received a blow on his breaſt with the butt end of a fuſil, that made him ſtagger ſeveral paces backward. Incenſed at this audacious application, the whole company charged the detachment ſword in hand, and after an obſtinate engagement, in which divers wounds were given and received, every ſoul of them was taken, and conveyed to the main guard. The commanding officer being made acquainted with the circumſtances of the quarrel, in conſideration of their youth and national ferocity, for which the French make large allowances, ſet them all at liberty, after having gently rebuked them for the irregularity and inſolence of their conduct: ſo that all our hero acquired by his gallantry and courage was a number of ſcandalous marks upon his viſage that confined him a whole week to his chamber. It was impoſſible to conceal this diſaſter from Mr. Jolter, who having obtained intelligence of the particulars, did not fail to remonſtrate againſt the raſhneſs of the adventure, which he obſerved muſt have been fatal to them, had their enemies been other than Frenchmen, who, of all people under the ſun, moſt rigorouſly obſerve the laws of hoſpitality.

As the governor's acquaintance lay chiefly among Iriſh and Engliſh prieſts, and a ſet of low people who live by making themſelves neceſſary to ſtrangers, either in teaching the French language, or executing ſmall commiſſions with which they are intruſted, he was not the moſt proper perſon in the world for regulating the taſte of a young gentleman who travelled for improvement, in expectation of making a figure one day in his own country. Being conſcious of his own incapacity, he contented himſelf with the office of a ſteward, and kept a faithful account of all the money that was diſburſed in the courſe of their family expence; not but that he was acquainted with all the places which were

viſited by ſtrangers on their firſt arrival at Paris; and he knew to a liard what was commonly given to the Swiſs of each remarkable hotel; though, with reſpect to the curious painting and ſtatuary that every where abound in that metropolis, he was more ignorant than the domeſtick that attends for a livre a day.

In ſhort, Mr. Jolter could give a very good account of the ſtages on the road, and ſave the expence of Antonini's detail of the curioſities in Paris; he was a connoiſſeur in ordinaries, from twelve to five and thirty livres; knew all the rates of a fiacre and remiſe, could diſpute with a tailleur or traiteur upon the articles of his bill, and ſcold the ſervants in tolerable French. But the laws, cuſtoms, and genius of the people, the characters of individuals, and ſcenes of poliſhed life, were ſubjects which he had neither opportunities to obſerve, inclination to conſider, nor diſcernment to diſtinguiſh. All his maxims were the ſuggeſtions of pedantry and prejudice; ſo that his perception was obſcured, his judgment biaſſed, his addreſs aukward, and his converſation abſurd and unentertaining: yet ſuch as I have repreſented this tutor, is the greateſt part of thoſe animals who lead raw boys about the world, under the denomination of travelling governors. Peregrine, therefore, being perfectly well acquainted with the extent of Mr. Jolter's abilities, never dreamed of conſulting him in the diſpoſition of his conduct, but parcelled out his time according to the dictates of his own reflection, and the information and direction of his companions, who had lived longer in France, and conſequently were better acquainted with the pleaſures of the place.

As ſoon as he was in a condition to appear *à la Françoiſe*, he hired a genteel chariot by the month, made the tour of the Luxembourg gallery, Palais Royal, all the remarkable hotels, churches, and celebrated places in Paris; viſited St. Cloud, Marli, Verſailles, Trianon, St. Germain, and Fountainbleau; enjoyed the opera, maſquerades, Italian and French comedy; and ſeldom failed

failed of appearing in the publick walks, in hopes of meeting with Mrs. Hornbeck, or ſome adventure ſuited to his romantick diſpoſition. He never doubted that his perſon would attract the notice of ſome diſtinguiſhed inamorata, and was vain enough to believe that few female hearts were able to reſiſt the artillery of his accompliſhments, ſhould he once find an opportunity of planting it to advantage. He preſented himſelf, however, at all the *ſpectacles* for many weeks, without reaping the fruits of his expectation; and began to entertain a very indifferent idea of the French diſcernment, which had overlooked him ſo long; when one day, in his way to the opera, his chariot was ſtopped by an *embarras* in the ſtreet, occaſioned by two peaſants, who having driven their carts againſt each other, quarrelled, and went to loggerheads on the ſpot. Such a rencounter is ſo uncommon in France, that the people ſhut up their ſhops, and from their windows threw cold water upon the combatants, with a view of putting an end to the battle, which was maintained with great fury and very little ſkill, until one of them receiving an accidental fall, the other took the advantage of this misfortune, and faſtening upon him as he lay, began to thump the pavement with his head. Our hero's equipage being detained cloſe by the field of this contention, Pipes could not bear to ſee the laws of boxing ſo ſcandalouſly tranſgreſſed, and leaping from his ſtation, pulled the offender from his antagoniſt, whom he raiſed up, and in the Engliſh language encouraged to a ſecond eſſay, inſtructing him at the ſame time, by clenching his fiſts according to art, and putting himſelf in a proper attitude. Thus confirmed, the enraged carman ſprung upon his foe, and in all appearance would have effectually revenged the injury he had ſuſtained, if he had not been prevented by the interpoſition of a lacquey belonging to a nobleman, whoſe coach was obliged to halt in conſequence of the diſpute. This footman, who was diſtinguiſhed by a cane, deſcending from his poſt, without the leaſt ceremony or expoſtulation, began to employ

ploy his weapon upon the head and ſhoulders of the peaſant who had been patronized by Pipes; upon which Thomas reſenting ſuch ungenerous behaviour, beſtowed ſuch a ſtomacher upon the officious intermeddler, as diſcompoſed the whole œconomy of his entrails, and obliged him to diſcharge the interjection *Ah!* with demonſtrations of great anguiſh and amazement. The other two footmen who ſtood behind the coach, ſeeing their fellow-ſervant ſo inſolently aſſaulted, flew to his aſſiſtance, and rained a moſt diſagreeable ſhower upon the head of his aggreſſor, who had no means of diverſion or defence. Peregrine, though he did not approve of Tom's conduct, could not bear to ſee him ſo roughly handled, eſpecially as he thought his own honour concerned in the fray, and therefore quitting his machine, came to the reſcue of his attendant, and charged his adverſaries ſword in hand. Two of them no ſooner perceived this reinforcement, than they betook themſelves to flight; and Pipes having twiſted the cane out of the hands of the third, belaboured him ſo unmercifully, that our hero thought proper to interpoſe his authority in his behalf. The common people ſtood aghaſt at this unprecedented boldneſs of Pickle, who underſtanding that the perſon whoſe ſervants he had diſciplined, was a general and prince of the blood, went up to the coach, and aſked pardon for what he had done, imputing his own behaviour to his ignorance of the other's quality. The old nobleman accepted of his apology with great politeneſs, thanking him for the trouble he had taken to reform the manners of his domeſticks; and gueſſing from our youth's appearance that he was ſome ſtranger of condition, very courteouſly invited him into the coach, on the ſuppoſition that they were both going to the opera. Pickle gladly embraced this opportunity of becoming acquainted with a perſon of ſuch rank, and ordering his own chariot to follow, accompanied the count to his *loge*, where he converſed with him during the whole entertainment.

He ſoon perceived that Peregrine was not deficient

in spirit or sense, and seemed particularly pleased with his engaging manner and easy deportment, qualifications for which the English nation is by no means remarkable in France, and therefore the more conspicuous and agreeable in the character of our hero, whom the nobleman carried home that same evening, and introduced to his lady and several persons of fashion who supped at his house. Peregrine was quite captivated by their affable behaviour, and the vivacity of their discourse; and after having been honoured with particular marks of consideration, took his leave, fully determined to cultivate such a valuable acquaintance.

His vanity suggested, that now the time was come when he should profit by his talents among the fair-sex, on whom he resolved to employ his utmost art and address. With this view he assiduously engaged in all parties, to which he had access by means of his noble friend, who let slip no opportunity of gratifying his ambition. He for some time shared in all his amusements, and was entertained in many of the best families of France; but he did not long enjoy that elevation of hope which had flattered his imagination. He soon perceived that it would be impossible to maintain the honourable connections he had made, without engaging every day at quadrille, or in other words, losing his money; for every person of rank, whether male or female, was a professed gamester, who knew and practised all the finesse of the art, of which he was entirely ignorant. Besides, he began to find himself a mere novice in French gallantry, which is supported by an amazing volubility of tongue, and obsequious and incredible attention to trifles, a surprizing faculty of laughing out of pure complaisance, and a nothingness of conversation which he could never attain. In short, our hero, who among his own countrymen would have passed for a sprightly entertaining fellow, was considered in the brilliant assemblies of France as a youth of a very phlegmatick disposition. No wonder then, that his pride was mortified at his own want of importance,

portance, which he did not fail to aſcribe to their defect in point of judgment and taſte: he conceived a diſguſt at the mercenary conduct, as well as the ſhallow intellects of the ladies; and after he had ſpent ſome months, and a round ſum of money, in fruitleſs attendance and addreſſes, he fairly quitted the purſuit, and conſoled himſelf with the converſation of a merry *fille de joye*, whoſe good graces he acquired by an allowance of twenty louis per month. That he might the more eaſily afford this expence, he diſmiſſed his chariot and French lacquey at the ſame time.

He then entered himſelf in a noted academy, in orto finiſh his exerciſes, and contracted an acquaintance with a few ſenſible people, whom he diſtinguiſhed at the coffee-houſe and ordinary to which he reſorted, and who contributed not a little to the improvement of his knowledge and taſte: for, prejudice apart, it muſt be owned, that France abounds with men of conſummate honour, profound ſagacity, and the moſt liberal education. From the converſation of ſuch, he obtained a diſtinct idea of their government and conſtitution; and though he could not help admiring the excellent order and œconomy of their police, the reſult of all his inquiries was ſelf-congratulation on his title to the privileges of a Britiſh ſubject. Indeed this invaluable birth-right was rendered conſpicuous by ſuch flagrant occurrences, which fell every day almoſt under his obſervation, that nothing but the groſſeſt prejudice could diſpute its exiſtence.

CHAP. VI.

Acquires a diſtinct Idea of the French Government; quarrels with a Mouſquetaire, whom he afterwards fights and vanquiſhes, after having puniſhed him for interfering in his amorous Recreations.

AMONG many other inſtances of the ſame nature, I believe it will not be amiſs to exhibit a few ſpecimens of their adminiſtration, which happened during his abode at Paris, that thoſe who have not the opportunity of obſerving for themſelves, or are in danger of being

being influenced by misrepresentation, may compare their own condition with that of their neighbours, and do justice to the constitution under which they live.

A lady of distinguished character having been lampooned by some obscure scribbler, who could not be discovered, the ministry, in consequence of her complaint, ordered no fewer than five and twenty abbés to be apprehended and sent to the Bastile, on the maxim of Herod, when he commanded the innocents to be murdered, hoping that the principal object of his cruelty would not escape in the general calamity; and the friends of those unhappy prisoners durst not even complain of the unjust persecution, but shrugged up their shoulders, and in silence deplored their misfortune, uncertain whether or not they should ever set eyes on them again.

About the same time, a gentleman of family, who had been oppressed by a certain powerful duke that lived in the neighbourhood, found means to be introduced to the king, who receiving his petition very graciously, asked in what regiment he served; and when the memorialist answered, that he had not the honour of being in the service, returned the paper unopened, and refused to hear one circumstance of his complaint; so that far from being redressed, he remained more than ever exposed to the tyranny of his oppressor: nay, so notorious is the discouragement of all those who presume to live independent of court favour and connections, that one of the gentlemen, whose friendship Peregrine cultivated, frankly owned he was in possession of a most romantick place, in one of the provinces, and deeply enamoured of a country life; and yet he durst not reside upon his own estate, lest by slackening his attendance upon the great, who honoured him with their protection, he should fall a prey to some rapacious intendant.

As for the common people, they are so much inured to the scourge and insolence of power, that every shabby subaltern, every beggarly cadet of the noblesse, every low

low retainer to the court, inſults and injures them with impunity. A certain *ecuyer*, or horſe-dealer, belonging to the king, being one day under the hands of a barber, who happened to cut the head of a pimple on his face, he ſtarted up, and drawing his ſword, wounded him deſperately in the ſhoulder. The poor tradeſman, hurt as he was, made an effort to retire, and was followed by this barbarous aſſaſſin, who, not contented with the vengeance he had taken, plunged his ſword a ſecond time into his body, and killed him on the ſpot. Having performed this inhuman exploit, he dreſſed himſelf with great deliberation, and going to Verſailles, immediately obtained a pardon for what he had done; triumphing in his brutality with ſuch inſolence, that the very next time he had occaſion to be ſhaved he ſat with his ſword ready drawn, in order to repeat the murder, in caſe the barber ſhould commit the ſame miſtake. Yet ſo tamed are theſe poor people to ſubjection, that when Peregrine mentioned this aſſaſſination to his own trimmer, with expreſſions of horror and deteſtation, the infatuated wretch replied, that without all doubt it was a misfortune, but it proceeded from the gentleman's paſſion; and obſerved, by way of encomium on the government, that ſuch vivacity is never puniſhed in France.

A few days after this outrage was committed, our youth, who was a profeſſed enemy to all oppreſſion, being in one of the firſt *loges* at the comedy, was eye-witneſs of an adventure which filled him with indignation: a tall, ferocious fellow, in the parterre, without the leaſt provocation, but prompted by the mere wantonneſs of pride, took hold of the hat of a very decent young man who happened to ſtand before him, and twirled it round upon his head. The party thus offended turned to his aggreſſor, and civilly aſked the reaſon of ſuch treatment; but he received no anſwer; and when he looked the other way, the inſult was repeated; upon which he expreſſed his reſentment as became a man of ſpirit, and deſired the offender to walk out with him. No ſooner did he thus ſignify his intention, than

his

his adverſary, ſwelling with rage, cocked his hat fiercely in his face, and fixing his hands in his ſides, pronounced with the moſt impetuous tone, 'Hark ye, Mr. Round Periwig, you muſt know that I am a mouſquetaire.' Scarce had this awful word eſcaped from his lips, when the blood forſook the lips of the poor challenger, who with the moſt abject ſubmiſſion begged pardon for his preſumption, and with difficulty obtained it, on condition that he ſhould immediately quit the place. Having thus exerciſed his authority, he turned to one of his companions, and with an air of diſdainful ridicule, told him he was like to have had an affair with a Bourgeoiſe; adding, by way of heightening the irony, 'Egad! I believe he's a phyſician.'

Our hero was ſo much ſhocked and irritated at this licentious behaviour, that he could not ſuppreſs his reſentment, which he manifeſted by ſaying to this Hector, 'Sir, a phyſician may be a man of honour.' To this remonſtrance, which was delivered with a very ſignificant countenance, the mouſquetaire made no other reply, but that of echoing his aſſertion with a loud laugh, in which he was joined by his confederates. Peregrine, glowing with reſentment, called him a *fanfaron*, and withdrew in expectation of being followed into the ſtreet. The other underſtood the hint, and a rencounter muſt have enſued, had not the officer of the guard, who had overheard what paſſed, prevented the meeting, by putting the mouſquetaire immediately under arreſt. Our young gentleman waited at the door of the parterre, until he was informed of this interpoſition, and then went home very much chagrined at his diſappointment; for he was an utter ſtranger to fear and diffidence on thoſe occaſions, and had ſet his heart upon chaſtiſing the inſolence of this bully, who had treated him with ſuch diſreſpect.

This adventure was not ſo private but that it reached the ears of Mr. Jolter, by the canal of ſome Engliſh gentlemen who were preſent when it happened; and the governor, who entertained a moſt dreadful idea of the mouſquetaires,

mousquetaires, being alarmed at a quarrel, the consequence of which might be fatal to his charge, waited on the British ambassador, and begged he would take Peregrine under his immediate protection. His excellency having heard the circumstance of the dispute, sent one of his gentlemen to invite the youth to dinner; and after having assured him that he might depend upon his countenance and regard, represented the rashness and impetuosity of his conduct so much to his conviction, that he promised to act more circumspectly for the future, and drop all thoughts of the mousquetaire from that moment.

A few days after he had taken this laudable resolution, Pipes, who had carried a billet to his mistress, informed him, that he had perceived a laced hat lying upon a marble slab in her apartment; and that when she came out of her own chamber to receive the letter, she appeared in manifest disorder.

From these hints of intelligence, our young gentleman suspected, or rather made no doubt of her infidelity; and being by this time well nigh cloyed with possession, was not sorry to find that she had given him cause to renounce her correspondence. That he might therefore detect her in the very breach of duty, and at the same time punish the gallant who had the presumption to invade his territories, he concerted with himself a plan which was executed in this manner. During his next interview with his dulcinea, far from discovering the least sign of jealousy or discontent, he affected the appearance of extraordinary fondness; and after having spent the afternoon with the shew of uncommon satisfaction, told her he was engaged in a party for Fontainbleau, and would set out from Paris that same evening; so that he should not have the pleasure of seeing her again for some days.

The lady, who was very well versed in the arts of her occupation, pretended to receive this piece of news with great affliction, and conjured him with such marks of real tenderness, to return as soon as possible to her

longing

longing arms, that he went away almoſt convinced of her ſincerity. Determined, however, to proſecute his ſcheme, he actually departed from Paris with two or three gentlemen of his acquaintance, who had hired a remiſe for a jaunt to Verſailles; and having accompanied them as far as the village of Paſsé, returned in the duſk of the evening on foot.

He waited impatiently till midnight, and then arming himſelf with a caſe of pocket-piſtols, and attended by truſty Tom with a cudgel in his hand, repaired to the lodgings of his ſuſpected inamorata. Having given Pipes his cue, he knocked gently at the door, which was no ſooner opened by the lacquey than he bolted in, before the fellow could recollect himſelf from the confuſion occaſioned by his unexpected appearance; and leaving Tom to guard the door, ordered the trembling valet to light him up ſtairs into his lady's apartment. The firſt object that preſented itſelf to his view, when he entered the anti-chamber, was a ſword upon the table, which he immediately ſeized, exclaiming in a loud and menacing voice, that his miſtreſs was falſe, and then in bed with another gallant, whom he would inſtantly put to death. This declaration, confirmed by many terrible oaths, he calculated for the hearing of his rival; who, underſtanding his ſanguinary purpoſe, ſtarted up in great trepidation, and, naked as he was, dropped from the balcony into the ſtreet, while Peregrine thundered at the door for admittance, and gueſſing his deſign, gave him an opportunity of making this precipitate retreat. Pipes, who ſtood centinel at the door, obſerving the fugitive deſcend, attacked him with his cudgel, and ſweating him from one end of the ſtreet to the other, at laſt committed him to the guet, by whom he was conveyed to the officer on duty in a moſt diſgraceful and deplorable condition.

Meanwhile, Peregrine having burſt open the chamber-door, found the lady in the utmoſt dread and conſternation, and the ſpoils of her favourite ſcattered about the room; but his reſentment was doubly grati-

fied, when he learned upon enquiry, that the perſon who had been ſo diſagreeably interrupted, was no other than that individual mouſquetaire with whom he had quarrelled at the comedy. He upbraided the nymph with her perfidy and ingratitude, and telling her that ſhe muſt not expect the continuance of his regard, or the appointments which ſhe had hitherto enjoyed from his bounty, went home to his own lodgings, overjoyed at the iſſue of the adventure.

The ſoldier, exaſperated at the diſgrace he had undergone, as well as at the outrageous inſult of the Engliſh valet, whom he believed his maſter had tutored for that purpoſe, no ſooner extricated himſelf from the opprobrious ſituation he had incurred, than breathing vengeance againſt the author of the affront, he came to Peregrine's apartment, and demanded ſatisfaction upon the ramparts, next morning before ſun riſe. Our hero aſſured him, he would not fail to pay his reſpects to him at the time and place appointed; and foreſeeing that he might be prevented from keeping this engagement by the officious care of his governor, who ſaw the mouſquetaire come in, he told Mr. Jolter, that the Frenchman had viſited him in conſequence of an order he had received from his ſuperiors, to make an apology for his rude behaviour to him in the play-houſe, and that they had parted very good friends. This aſſurance, together with Pickle's tranquil and unconcerned behaviour through the day, quieted the terrors which had began to take poſſeſſion of his tutor's imagination; ſo that the youth had an opportunity of giving him the ſlip at night, when he betook himſelf to the lodgings of a friend, whom he engaged as his ſecond, and with whom he immediately took the field, in order to avoid the ſearch which Jolter, upon miſſing him, might ſet on foot.

This was a neceſſary precaution; for as he did not appear at ſupper, and Pipes, who uſually attended him in his excurſions, could give no account of his motions, the governor was dreadfully alarmed at his abſence,

and ordered his man to run in queſt of his maſter to all the places which he uſed to frequent, while he himſelf went to the commiſſaire, and communicating his ſuſpicions, was accommodated with a party of the horſe-guards, who patroled round all the environs of the city, with a view of preventing the rencounter. Pipes might have directed them to the lady, by whoſe information they could have learned the name and lodgings of the mouſquetaire, and if he had been apprehended, the duel would not have happened; but he did not chuſe to run the riſk of diſobliging his maſter, by intermeddling in the affair, and was moreover very deſirous that the Frenchman ſhould be humbled, for he never doubted that Peregrine was more than a match for any two men in France. In this confidence, therefore, he ſought his maſter with great diligence, not with a view of diſappointing his intention, but in order to attend him to the battle, that he might ſtand by him, and ſee juſtice done.

While this enquiry was carried on, our hero and his companion concealed themſelves among ſome weeds that grew on the edge of the parapet, a few yards from the ſpot where he had agreed to meet the mouſquetaire; and ſcarce had the morning rendered objects diſtinguiſhable, when they perceived their men advancing boldly to the place. Peregrine ſeeing them approach, ſprung forward to the ground, that he might have the glory of anticipating his antagoniſt; and ſwords being drawn, all four were engaged in a twinkling. Pickle's eagerneſs had well nigh coſt him his life; for, without minding his footing, he flew directly to his oppoſer, and ſtumbling over a ſtone, was wounded on one ſide of his head before he could recover his attitude. Far from being diſpirited at this check, it ſerved only to animate him the more; being endowed with uncommon agility, he retrieved his poſture in a moment; and having parried a ſecond thruſt, returned the longe with ſuch incredible ſpeed, that the ſoldier had not time to reſume his guard, but was immediately run through the

the bend of his right-arm; and the ſword dropping out of his hand, our hero's victory was compleat.

Having diſpatched his own buſineſs, and received the acknowledgment of his adverſary, who with a look of infinite mortification obſerved, that his was the fortune of the day, he ran to part the ſeconds, juſt as the weapon was twiſted out of his companion's hand: upon which he took his place; and in all likelihood an obſtinate diſpute would have enſued, had they not been interrupted by the guard, at ſight of whom the two Frenchmen ſcampered off. Our young gentleman and his friend allowed themſelves to be taken priſoners by the detachment which had been ſent out for that purpoſe, and were carried before the magiſtrate; who having ſharply reprimanded them for preſuming to act in contempt of the laws, ſet them at liberty, in conſideration of their being ſtrangers, cautioning them at the ſame time to beware of ſuch exploits for the future.

When Peregrine returned to his own lodgings, Pipes ſeeing the blood trickling down upon his maſter's neckcloth and ſolitaire, gave evident tokens of ſurprize and concern; not for the conſequences of the wound, which he did not ſuppoſe dangerous, but for the glory of Old England, which he was afraid had ſuffered in the engagement; for he could not help ſaying, with an air of chagrin, as he followed the youth into his chamber, 'I do ſuppoſe as how you gave that lubberly Frenchman as good as he brought.'

CHAP. VII.

Mr. Jolter threatens to leave him on Account of his Miſconduct, which he promiſes to rectify; but his Reſolution is defeated by the Impetuoſity of his Paſſions. He meets accidentally with Mrs. Hornbeck, who elopes with him from her Huſband, but is reſtored by the Interpoſition of the Britiſh Ambaſſador.

THOUGH Mr. Jolter was extremely well pleaſed at the ſafety of his pupil, he could not forgive him for the terror and anxiety he had undergone on his account; and roundly told him, that notwithſtanding the inclination

inclination and attachment he had to his perſon, he would immediately depart for England, if ever he ſhould hear of his being involved in ſuch another adventure; for it could not be expected that he would ſacrifice his own quiet, to an unrequited regard for one who ſeemed determined to keep him in continual uneaſineſs and apprehenſion.

To this declaration Pickle made anſwer, that Mr. Jolter, by this time, ought to be convinced of the attention he had always paid to his eaſe and ſatisfaction; ſince he well knew that he had ever looked upon him in the light of a friend rather than as a counſellor or tutor; and deſired his company in France, with a view of promoting his intereſt, not for any emolument he could expect from his inſtruction. This being the caſe, he was at liberty to conſult his own inclination, with regard to going or ſtaying; though he could not help owning himſelf obliged by the concern he expreſſed for his ſafety, and would endeavour, for his own ſake, to avoid giving him any cauſe of diſturbance in time to come.

No man was more capable of moralizing upon Peregrine's miſconduct than himſelf; his reflections were extremely juſt and ſagacious, and attended with no other diſadvantage, but that of occurring too late. He projected a thouſand ſalutary ſchemes of deportment; but, like other projectors, he never had intereſt enough with the miniſtry of his paſſions to bring any one of them to bear. He had, in the heyday of his gallantry, received a letter from his friend Gauntlet, with a kind poſtſcript from his charming Emilia; but it arrived at a very unſeaſonable juncture, when his imagination was engroſſed by conqueſts that more agreeably flattered his ambition; ſo that he could not find leiſure and inclination from that day to honour the correſpondence which he himſelf had ſolicited. His vanity had by this time diſapproved of the engagement he had contracted in the rawneſs and inexperience of youth; ſuggeſting, that he was born to make ſuch an important

figure in life, as ought to raiſe his ideas above the conſideration of any ſuch middling connections, and fix his attention upon objects of the moſt ſublime attraction. Theſe dictates of ridiculous pride had almoſt effaced the remembrance of his amiable miſtreſs, or at leaſt ſo far warped his morals and integrity, that he actually began to conceive hopes of her, altogether unworthy of his own character and her deſerts.

Meanwhile being deſtitute of a toy for the dalliance of his idle hours, he employed ſeveral ſpies, and almoſt every day made a tour of the publick places in perſon, with a view of procuring intelligence of Mr. Hornbeck, with whoſe wife he longed to have another interview. In this courſe of expectation had he exerciſed himſelf a whole fortnight, when chancing to be at the hoſpital of the invalids with a gentleman lately arrived from England, he no ſooner entered the church than he perceived this lady, attended by her ſpouſe, who at ſight of our hero changed colour and looked another way, in order to diſcourage any communication between them. But the young man, who was not ſo eaſily repulſed, advanced with great aſſurance to his fellow-traveller, and taking him by the hand, expreſſed his ſatisfaction at this unexpected meeting; kindly upbraiding him for his precipitate retreat from Chantilly. Before Hornbeck could make any reply, he went up to his wife, whom he complimented in the ſame manner, aſſuring her with ſome ſignificant glances, he was extremely mortified that ſhe had put it out of his power to pay his reſpects to her on his firſt arrival at Paris; and then turning to her huſband, who thought proper to keep cloſe to him in this conference, begged to know where he could have the honour of waiting upon him; obſerving, at the ſame time, that he himſelf lived *a l'academie de Palfrenier*.

Mr. Hornbeck, without making any apology for his elopement on the road, thanked Mr. Pickle for his complaiſance in a very cool and diſobliging manner; ſaying, that as he intended to ſhift his lodgings in a day

or two, he could not expect the pleasure of seeing him, until he should be settled, when he would call at the academy, and conduct him to his new habitation.

Pickle, who was not unacquainted with the sentiments of this jealous gentleman, did not put much confidence in his promise, and therefore made divers efforts to enjoy a little private conversation with his wife; but he was baffled in all his attempts by the indefatigable vigilance of her keeper, and reaped no other immediate pleasure from this accidental meeting, than that of a kind squeeze while he handed her into the coach. However, as he had been witness to some instances of her invention, and was no stranger to the favourable disposition of her heart, he entertained some faint hopes of profiting by her understanding, and was not deceived in his expectation; for the very next forenoon a Savoyard called at the academy, and put the following billet in his hand.

'COIND SUR,

'HEAVING the playsure of meating with 'you at the ospital of anvilheads, I take this lubbertea of latin you know, that I lotch at the *hottail de May cong dangle ruoy Doghouseten*, with two posts at 'the gait, naytheir of um very hole, ware I shall be at 'the windore, if in kais you will be so good as to pass 'that way at sicks a cloak in the heavening, when Mr. 'Hornbeck goes to the *Calfhay de Contea*. Prey for 'the loaf of Geesus keep this from the nolegs of my 'husband, ells he will make me leed a hell upon urth. 'Being all from, dear Sur, your most umbell servan wile

'DEBORAH HORNBECK.'

Our young gentleman was ravished at the receipt of this elegant epistle, which was directed, *A Monsr Monsr Pickbell, a la Gaddamme de Paul Freny*, and did not fail to obey the summons at the hour of assignation; when the lady, true to her appointment, beckoned him up stairs, and he had the good fortune to be admitted unseen.

After the first transports of their mutual joy at meeting,

ing, ſhe told him, that her huſband had been very ſurly and croſs ever ſince the adventure at Chantilly, which he had not yet digeſted; that he had laid ſevere injunctions upon her to avoid all commerce with Pickle, and even threatened to ſhut her up in a convent for life, if ever ſhe ſhould diſcover the leaſt inclination to renew that acquaintance; that ſhe had been cooped up in her chamber ſince her arrival at Paris, without being permitted to ſee the place, or indeed any company, except that of her landlady, whoſe language ſhe did not underſtand; ſo that her ſpirit being broke, and her health impaired, he was prevailed upon ſome days ago to indulge her in a few airings, during which ſhe had ſeen the gardens of the Luxembourg, the Thuilleries and Palais Royal, though at thoſe times when there was no company in the walks; and that it was in one of thoſe excurſions ſhe had the happineſs of meeting with him. Finally, ſhe gave him to underſtand, that rather than continue longer in ſuch confinement with the man whom ſhe could not love, ſhe would inſtantly give him the ſlip, and put herſelf under the protection of her lover.

Raſh and unthinking as this declaration might be, the young gentleman was ſo much of a gallant, that he would not baulk the lady's inclinations, and too infatuated by his paſſion to foreſee the conſequences of ſuch a dangerous ſtep; he therefore, without heſitation, embraced the propoſal, and the coaſt being clear, they ſallied into the ſtreet, where Peregrine calling a fiacre, ordered the coachman to drive them to a tavern: but knowing it would not be in his power to conceal her from the ſearch of the lieutenant de police, if ſhe ſhould remain within the walls of Paris, he hired a remiſe, and carried her that ſame evening to Villejuif, about four leagues from town, where he ſtaid with her all night; and having boarded her on a genteel penſion, and ſettled the œconomy of his future viſits, returned next day to his own lodgings.

While he thus enjoyed his ſucceſs, her huſband en-

dured the tortures of the damned. When he returned from the coffee-houſe, and underſtood that his wife had eloped, without being perceived by any perſon in the family, he began to rave and foam with rage and jealouſy, and in the fury of diſtraction, accuſed the landlady of being an accomplice in her eſcape, threatening to complain of her to the commiſſaire. The woman could not conceive how Mrs. Hornbeck, who ſhe knew was an utter ſtranger to the French language, and kept no ſort of company, could elude the caution of her huſband, and find any refuge in a place where ſhe had no acquaintance, and began to ſuſpect the lodger's emotion was no other than an affected paſſion to conceal his own practices upon his wife, who had perhaps fallen a ſacrifice to his jealous diſpoſition. She therefore ſpared him the trouble of putting his menaces in execution, by going to the magiſtrate without any farther deliberation, and giving an account of what ſhe knew concerning this myſterious affair, with certain inſinuations againſt Hornbeck's character, which ſhe repreſented as peeviſh and capricious to the laſt degree.

While ſhe thus anticipated the purpoſe of the plaintiff, her information was interrupted by the arrival of the party himſelf, who exhibited his complaint with ſuch evident marks of perturbation, anger, and impatience, that the commiſſaire could eaſily perceive that he had no ſhare in the diſappearance of his wife; and directed him to the lieutenant de police, whoſe province it is to take cognizance of ſuch occurrences. This gentleman, who preſides over the city of Paris, having heard the particulars of Hornbeck's misfortune, aſked if he ſuſpected any individual perſon as the ſeducer of his yoke-fellow; and when he mentioned Peregrine as the object of his ſuſpicion, granted a warrant and a detatchment of ſoldiers to ſearch for and retrieve the fugitive.

The huſband conducted them immediately to the academy where our hero lodged, and having rummaged the whole place, to the aſtoniſhment of Mr. Jolter,

without

without finding either his wife or the ſuppoſed raviſher, accompanied them to all the publick-houſes in the fauxbourg; which having examined alſo without ſucceſs, he returned to the magiſtrate in a ſtate of deſpair, and obtained a promiſe of his making ſuch an effectual inquiry, that in three days he ſhould have an account of her, provided ſhe was alive and within the walls of Paris.

Our adventurer, who had foreſeen all this diſturbance, was not at all ſurprized when his governor told him what had happened; and conjured him to reſtore the woman to the right owner, with many pathetick remonſtrances touching the heinous ſin of adultery, the diſtraction of the unfortunate huſband, and the danger of incurring the reſentment of an arbitrary government, which, upon application being made, would not fail of eſpouſing the cauſe of the injured. He denied, with great effrontery, that he had the leaſt concern in the matter, pretended to reſent the deportment of Hornbeck, whom he threatened to chaſtiſe for his ſcandalous ſuſpicion, and expreſſed his diſpleaſure at the credulity of Jolter, who ſeemed to doubt the veracity of his aſſeveration.

Notwithſtanding this confident behaviour, Jolter could not help entertaining doubts of his ſincerity; and viſiting the diſconſolate ſwain, begged he would, for the honour of his country, as well as for the ſake of his own reputation, diſcontinue his addreſſes to the lieutenant de police, and apply to the Britiſh ambaſſador, who, by dint of friendly admonitions, would certainly prevail upon Mr. Pickle to do him all the juſtice in his power, if he was really the author of the injury he had ſuſtained. The governor urged this advice with the appearance of ſo much ſympathy and concern, promiſing to co-operate with all his influence in his behalf, that Hornbeck embraced the propoſal, communicated his purpoſe to the magiſtrate, who commended the reſolution as the moſt decent and deſirable expedient he could uſe, and then waited upon his excellency, who

readily

readily eſpouſed his cauſe, and ſending for the young gentleman that ſame evening, read him ſuch a leſſon in private, as extorted a confeſſion of the whole affair. Not that he aſſailed him with ſour and ſupercilious maxims, or ſevere rebuke, becauſe he had penetration enough to diſcern that Peregrine's diſpoſition was impregnable to all ſuch attacks; but he firſt of all rallied him upon his intriguing genius; then, in an humorous manner, deſcribed the diſtraction of the poor cuckold, who he owned was juſtly puniſhed for the abſurdity of his conduct; and laſtly, upon the ſuppoſition, that it would be no great effort in Pickle to part with ſuch a conqueſt, eſpecially after it had been for ſome time poſſeſſed, repreſented the neceſſity and expediency of reſtoring her, not only out of regard to his own character, and that of his nation, but alſo with a view to his eaſe, which would in a little time be very much invaded by ſuch an incumbrance, that in all probability would involve him in a thouſand difficulties and diſguſts. Beſides, he aſſured him, that he was already, by order of the lieutenant de police, ſurrounded with ſpies, who would watch all his motions, and immediately diſcover the retreat in which he had diſpoſed his prize. Theſe arguments, and the frank familiar manner in which they were delivered, but, above all, the laſt conſideration, induced the young gentleman to diſcloſe the whole of his proceedings to the ambaſſador, and promiſed to be governed by his direction, provided the lady ſhould not ſuffer for the ſtep ſhe had taken, but be received by her huſband with due reverence and reſpect. Theſe ſtipulations being agreed to, he undertook to produce her in eight and forty hours; and taking coach immediately, drove to the place of her reſidence, where he ſpent a whole day and a night in convincing her of the impoſſibility of their enjoying each other in that manner. Then returning to Paris, he delivered her into the hands of the ambaſſador, who having aſſured her, that ſhe might depend upon his friendſhip and protection, in caſe ſhe ſhould find herſelf

aggrieved

aggrieved by the jealous temper of Mr. Hornbeck; reſtored her to her legitimate lord, whom he counſelled to exempt her from that reſtraint, which in all probability had been the cauſe of her elopement, and endeavour to conciliate her affection by tender and reſpectful uſage.

The huſband behaved with great humility and compliance, proteſting that his chief ſtudy ſhould be to contrive parties for her pleaſure and ſatisfaction. But no ſooner did he regain poſſeſſion of his ſtray ſheep, than he locked her up more cloſely than ever; and after having revolved various ſchemes for her reformation, determined to board her in a convent, under the inſpection of a prudent abbeſs, who ſhould ſuperintend her morals, and recal her to the paths of virtue, which ſhe had forſaken. With this view he conſulted an Engliſh prieſt of his acquaintance, who adviſed him to ſettle her in a monaſtery at Liſle, that ſhe might be as far as poſſible from the machinations of her lover; and gave him a letter of recommendation to the ſuperior of a certain convent in that place, for which Mr. Hornbeck ſet out in a few days with his troubleſome charge.

CHAP. VIII.

Peregrine reſolves to return to England; is diverted with the odd Characters of two of his Countrymen, with whom he contracts an Acquaintance in the Apartments of the Palais Royal.

IN the mean time, our hero received a letter from his aunt, importing, that the commodore was in a very declining way, and longed much to ſee him at the garriſon; and at the ſame time he heard from his ſiſter, who gave him to underſtand that the young gentleman who had for ſome time made his addreſſes to her, was become very preſſing in his ſolicitations; ſo that ſhe wanted to know in what manner ſhe ſhould anſwer his repeated entreaties. Theſe two conſiderations determined the young gentleman to return to his native country; a reſolution that was far from being diſagreeable to Jolter, who knew that the incumbent on a living,

ing, which was in the gift of Trunnion, was extremely old, and that it would be his intereſt to be upon the ſpot at the ſaid incumbent's deceaſe.

Peregrine, who had reſided about fifteen months in France, thought he was now ſufficiently qualified for eclipſing moſt of his cotemporaries in England, and therefore prepared for his departure with infinite alacrity; being moreover inflamed with the moſt ardent deſire of reviſiting his friends, and renewing his connections, particularly with Emilia, whoſe heart he by this time thought he was able to reduce on his own terms.

As he propoſed to make the tour of Flanders and Holland in his return to England, he reſolved to ſtay in Paris a week or two after his affairs were ſettled, in hope of finding ſome agreeable companion diſpoſed for the ſame journey, and in order to refreſh his memory, made a ſecond circuit round all the places in that capital, where any curious production of art is to be ſeen. In the courſe of the ſecond examination he chanced to enter the Palais Royal, juſt as two gentlemen alighted from a fiacre at the gate, and all three being admitted at the ſame time, he ſoon perceived that the ſtrangers were of his own country. One of them was a young man, in whoſe air and countenance appeared all the uncouth gravity and ſupercilious ſelf-conceit of a phyſician piping hot from his ſtudies; while the other, to whom his companion ſpoke by the appellation of Mr. Pallet, diſplayed, at firſt ſight, a ſtrange compoſition of levity and aſſurance. Indeed, their characters, dreſs, and addreſs, were ſtrongly contraſted: the doctor wore a ſuit of black, and a huge tie-wig, neither ſuitable to his own age, nor the faſhion of the country where he then lived; whereas the other, though ſeemingly turned of fifty, ſtrutted in a gay ſummer dreſs of the Pariſian cut, with a bag to his own grey hair, and a red feather in his hat, which he carried under his arm. As theſe figures ſeemed to promiſe ſomething entertaining, Pickle entered into converſation with them immedi-

afety, and foon difcovered that the old gentleman was a painter from London, who had ftole a fortnight from his occupation, in order to vifit the remarkable paintings of France and Flanders; and that the doctor had taken the opportunity of accompanying him in his tour. Being extremely talkative, he not only communicated thefe particulars to our hero in a very few minutes after their meeting, but alfo took occafion to whifper in his ear, that his fellow-traveller was a man of vaft learning, and, beyond all doubt, the greateft poet of the age. As for himfelf, he was under no neceffity of making his own eulogium; for he foon gave fuch fpecimens of his tafte and talents, as left Pickle no room to doubt of his capacity.

While they ftood confidering the pictures in one of the firft apartments, which are by no means the moft mafterly compofitions, the Swifs, who fet up for a conoiffeur, looking at a certain piece, pronounced the word, '*Magnifique!*' with a note of admiration; upon which Mr. Pallet, who was not at all a critick in the French language, replied with great vivacity, '*Manufac*, you mean, and a very indifferent piece of manufacture it is; pray, gentlemen, take notice, there is no keeping in thofe heads upon the back-ground, nor no relief in the principal figure: then you'll obferve the fhadings are harfh to the laft degree—and come a little clofer this way—don't you perceive that the fore-fhortening of that arm is monftrous—agad, Sir; there is an abfolute fracture in the limb.—Doctor, you underftand anatomy; don't you think that mufcle evidently mifplaced?—Hark ye, Mr. What-d'ye-call-um,' turning to the attendant, 'what is the name of the dauber who painted that miferable performance?' The Swifs imagining that he was all this time expreffing his fatisfaction, fanctioned his fuppofed commendation by exclaiming, *fans prix!* 'Right,' cried Pallet, 'I could not recollect his name, though his manner is quite familiar to me. We have a few pieces in England, done by that fame Sangpree; but there they are in no eftimation;

mation; we have more taste among us than to relish the productions of such a miserable gout.—A'n't he an ignorant coxcomb, doctor?' The physician, ashamed of his companion's blunder, thought it was necessary, for the honour of his own character, to take notice of it before the stranger, and therefore answered his question, by repeating this line from Horace,

'*Mutato nomine, de te fabula narratur.*'

The painter, who was rather more ignorant of Latin than of French, taking it for granted that this question of his friend conveyed an assent to his opinion, 'Very true,' said he, '*Potatoe domine date*, this piece is not worth a single potatoe!' Peregrine was astonished at this surprizing perversion of the words and meaning of a Latin line, which at first he could not help thinking was a premeditated joke; but upon second thoughts, he saw no reason to doubt that it was the extemporaneous effect of sheer pertness and ignorance; at which he broke out into an immoderate fit of laughter. Pallet, believing that the gentleman's mirth was occasioned by his arch animadversions upon the work of Sangpree, underwent the same emotion in a much louder strain, and endeavoured to heighten the jest by more observations of the same nature; while the doctor, confounded at his impudence and want of knowledge, reprimanded him in these words of Homer,

'*Siga me tis allos Achaion touton akouse muthon.*'

This rebuke the reader will easily perceive, was not calculated for the meridian of his friend's intellects, but uttered with a view of raising his own character in the opinion of Mr. Pickle, who retorted this parade of learning in three verses from the same author, being part of the speech of Polydamus to Hector, importing that it was impossible for one man to excel in every thing. The self-sufficient physician, who did not expect such a repartee from a youth of Peregrine's appearance, looked upon his reply as a fair challenge, and instantly rehearsed forty or fifty lines of the Iliad in a breath. Observing that the stranger made no ef-

fort to match this effusion, he interpreted his silence into submission; then, in order to ascertain his victory, insulted him with divers fragments of authors, whom his supposed competitor did not even know by name; while Mr. Pallet stared with admiration at the profound scholarship of his companion. Our young gentleman, far from repining at this superiority, laughed within himself at the ridiculous ambition of the pedantick doctor. He rated him in his own mind as a mere index-hunter, who held the eel of science by the tail, and foresaw an infinite fund of diversion in his solemnity and pride, if properly extracted by means of his fellow-traveller's vanity and assurance. Prompted by these considerations, he resolved to cultivate their acquaintance; and, if possible, amuse himself at their expence in his journey through Flanders, understanding that they were determined upon the same route. In this view he treated them with extraordinary attention, and seemed to pay particular deference to the remarks of the painter, who with great intrepidity pronounced judgment upon every picture in the palace; or, in other words, exposed his own nakedness in every sentence that proceeded from his mouth.

When they came to consider the Murder of the Innocents by Le Brun, the Swiss observed that it was *un beau morceau*; and Mr. Pallet replied, 'Yes, yes, one may see with half an eye, that it can be the production of no other; for *Bornoso's* style, both in colouring and drapery, is altogether peculiar; then his design is tame, and his expression antick and unnatural. Doctor, you have seen my Judgment of Solomon; I think I may without presumption—but, I don't chuse to make comparisons; I leave that odious task to other people, and let my works speak for themselves. France, to be sure, is rich in the arts, but what is the reason? the king encourages men of genius with honour and rewards: whereas, in England, we are obliged to stand upon our own feet, and combat the envy and malice of our brethren. Agad! I have a good mind to come

and

and ſettle here in Paris; I ſhould like to have an apartment in the Louvre, with a ſnug penſion of ſo many thouſand livres.' In this manner did Pallet proceed with an eternal rotation of tongue, floundering from one miſtake to another, until it was the turn of Pouſſin's Seven Sacraments to be examined. Here again the Swiſs, out of the abundance of his zeal, expreſſed his admiration, by ſaying theſe pieces were *impayable*; when the painter turning to him with an air of exultation, 'Pardon me, friend, there you happen to be miſtaken, theſe are none of *Impayable*'s; but done by Nicholas Pouſeen. I have ſeen prints of them in England, ſo that none of your tricks upon travellers, Mr. Swiſs or Swaſh, or what's you name!' He was very much elated by this imaginary triumph of his underſtanding, which animated him to perſevere in his curious obſervations upon all the other pieces of that celebrated collection; but perceiving that the doctor manifeſted no ſigns of pleaſure and ſatisfaction, but rather beheld them with a ſilent air of diſdain, he could not digeſt his indifference, and aſked, with a waggiſh ſneer, if ever he had ſeen ſuch a number of maſter-pieces before? The phyſician, eyeing him with a look of compaſſion mingled with contempt, obſerved that there was nothing there which deſerved the attention of any perſon acquainted with the ideas of the ancients; and that the author of the fineſt piece now in being, was unworthy to clean the bruſhes of one of thoſe great maſters, who are celebrated by the Greek and Roman writers. 'O lud! O lud!' exclaimed the painter, with a loud laugh; 'you have fairly brought yourſelf into a dilemma at laſt, dear doctor; for it is well known that your ancient Greek and Roman artiſts knew nothing at all of the matter, in compariſon with our modern maſters; for this good reaſon, becauſe they had but three or four colours, and knew not how to paint with oil: beſides, which of all your old fuſty Grecians would you put upon a footing with the divine Raphael, the moſt excellent Michael Angelo Bona Roti, the graceful Gui-

do, the bewitching Titian, and above all others, the ſublime Rubens; the ——' He would have proceeded with a long catalogue of names, which he had got by heart for the purpoſe, without retaining the leaſt idea of their ſeveral qualifications, had he not been interrupted by his friend, whoſe indignation being kindled by the irreverence with which he mentioned the Greeks, he called him blaſphemer, Goth Bœotian; and in his turn, aſked with great vehemence, which of thoſe puny moderns could match with Panænus of Athens, and his brother Phidias, Polycletus Sicyon, Polygnotus the Thraſian, Parrhaſius of Epheſus, ſurnamed Abrodiaitos or *the Beau*, and Apelles the prince of painters? He challenged him to ſhew any portrait of theſe days that could vie with the Helen of Zeuxis the Heraclean, or any compoſition equal to the ſacrifice of Iphigenia, by Timanthes the Sicyonian; not to mention the twelve gods of Aſclepiadorus the Athenian, for which Mnaſon, tyrant of Elatea, gave him about three hundred pounds a piece; or Homer's Hell by Nicias, who refuſed ſixty talents, amounting to upwards of eleven thouſand pounds, and generouſly made a preſent of it to his own country. He deſired him to produce a collection equal to that in the temple of Delphos, mentioned in the *Ion* of Euripides; where Hercules and his companion Iolaus are repreſented in the act of killing the Lernæan hydra with golden ſickles; *kruſtais harpais*, where Bellerophon appears on his winged ſteed, vanquiſhing the fire-breathing chimera, *tan puripnouſan*; and the war of the giants is deſcribed. Here Jupiter ſtands wielding the red-hot thunder-bolts, *Keraunon amphipuron*; there Pallas, dreadful to the view, *Gorgopon*, brandiſhed her ſpear againſt the huge Enceladus; and Bacchus, with ſlender ivy rods, defeats and ſlays the *gas teknon*, or mighty ſon of earth. The painter was aſtoniſhed and confounded at this rhapſody of names and inſtances, which was uttered with ſurprizing eagerneſs and rapidity; ſuſpecting at firſt that the whole was the creation of his own brain; but when
Pickle,

Pickle, with a view of flattering the Doctor's self-conceit, espoused his side of the question, and confirmed the truth of every thing he advanced, Mr. Pallet changed his opinion, and in emphatick silence adored the immensity of his friend's understanding. In short, Peregrine easily perceived that they were false enthusiasts, without the smallest pretensions to taste and sensibility; and pretended to be in raptures with they knew not what; the one thinking it was incumbent upon him to express transports on seeing the works of those who had been most eminent in his profession, whether they did or did not really raise his admiration; and the other, as a scholar, deeming it his duty to magnify the ancients above all competition, with an affected fervour, which the knowledge of their excellencies never inspired. Indeed, our young gentleman so successfully accommodated himself to the dispositions of each, that long before their review was finished, he was become a particular favourite with both.

From the Palais Royal he accompanied them to the cloisters of the Carthusians, where they considered the history of St. Bruno, by Le Sueur, whose name being utterly unknown to the painter, he gave judgment against the whole composition, as pitiful and paltry; though in the opinion of all good judges it is a most masterly performance.

Having satisfied their curiosity in this place, Peregrine asked them to favour him with their company at dinner; but whether out of caution against the insinuations of one whose character they did not know, or by reason of a prior engagement, they declined his invitation, on pretence of having an appointment at a certain ordinary, though they expressed a desire of being farther acquainted with him; and Mr. Pallet took the freedom of asking his name; which he not only declared, but promised, as they were strangers in Paris, to wait upon them next day in the forenoon, in order to conduct them to the hotel de Thoulouse, and the houses of several other noblemen, remarkable for paint-

ings or curious furniture. They thankfully embraced his propofal; and that fame day made enquiry among the Englifh gentlemen about the character of our hero; which they found fo much to their fatisfaction, that upon their fecond meeting, they courted his good graces without referve; and as they had heard of his intended departure, begged earneftly to have the honour of accompanying him through the Low Countries. He affured them, that nothing could be more agreeable to him, than the profpect of having fuch fellow-travellers; and they immediately appointed a day for fetting out on that tour.

CHAP. IX.

He introduces his new Friends to Mr. Jolter, with whom the Doctor enters into a Difpute upon Government, which had well nigh terminated in open War.

MEANWHILE, he not only made them acquainted with every thing worth feeing in town, but attended them in their excurfions to all the king's houfes within a day's journey of Paris; and in the courfe of thefe parties, treated them with an elegant dinner at his own apartments; where a difpute arofe between the doctor and Mr. Jolter, which had well nigh terminated in an irreconcileable animofity. Thefe gentlemen, with an equal fhare of pride, pedantry, and faturnine difpofition, were by the accidents of education and company, diametrically oppofite in political maxims; the one, as we have already obferved, being a bigotted high-churchman, and the other a rank republican. It was an article of the governor's creed, that the people could not be happy, nor the earth yield its fruits in abundance, under a reftricted clergy and limited government: whereas, in the doctor's opinion, it was an eternal truth, that no conftitution was fo perfect as the democracy, and that no country could flourifh but under the adminiftration of the mob.

These confiderations being premifed, no wonder that they happened to difagree in the freedom of an unreferved converfation, efpecially as their entertainer took

all

all opportunities of encouraging and enflaming the contention. The first source of their difference was an unlucky remark of the painter, who observed that the partridge of which he was then eating had the finest relish of any he had ever tasted. His friend owned that the birds were the best of the kind he had seen in France; but affirmed, that they were neither so plump nor delicious as those that were caught in England. The governor, considering this observation as the effect of prejudice and inexperience, said, with a sarcastical smile—'I believe, Sir, you are very well disposed to find every thing here inferior to the productions of your own country.'—'True, Sir,' answered the physician, with a certain solemnity of aspect, 'and not without good reason, I hope.'—'And pray,' resumed the tutor, 'why may not the partridges of France be as good as those of England?'—'For a very plain reason,' replied the other, 'because they are not so well fed. The iron hand of Oppression is extended to all animals within the French dominions, even to the beasts of the field and the fowls of the air. *Kunessin oionoisi te pasi.*' —'Egad!' cried the painter, 'that is a truth not to be controverted: for my own part, I am none of your tit-bits, one would think, but yet there's a freshness in the English complexion, a *ginseekye*, I think you call it, so inviting to a hungry Frenchman, that I have caught several in the very act of viewing me with an eye of extreme appetite, as I passed; and as for their curs, or rather their wolves, whenever I set my eyes on one of 'em—"Ah! your humble servant, Mr. Son of a Bitch!" I am upon my guard in an instant. The doctor can testify that their very horses, or more properly their live carrion, that drew our chaise, used to reach back their long necks, and smell at us, as a couple of delicious morsels.' This sally of Mr. Pallet, which was received with a general laugh of approbation, would, in all probability, have stifled the dispute in embryo, had not Mr. Jolter, with a self-applauding simper, ironically complimented the strangers on their talking like true Englishmen. The doctor, affronted

at the insinuation, told him with some warmth, that he was mistaken in his conjecture, his affections and ideas being confined to no particular country; for he considered himself as a citizen of the world. He owned himself more attached to England than to any other kingdom, but this preference was the effect of reflection, and not of prejudice; because the British constitution approached nearer than any other to that perfection of government, the democracy of Athens, which he hoped one day to see revived: he mentioned the death of Charles the First, and the expulsion of his son, with raptures of applause; inveighed with great acrimony against the kingly name; and in order to strengthen his opinion, repeated forty or fifty lines from one of the Philippicks of Demosthenes. Jolter hearing him speak so disrespectfully of the higher powers, glowed with indignation. He said his doctrines were detestable, and destructive of all right, order, and society; that monarchy was of Divine institution, therefore indefeasible by any human power; and of consequence those events in the English history which he had so liberally commended, were no other than flagrant instances of sacrilege, perfidy, and sedition; that the democracy of Athens was a most absurd constitution, productive of anarchy and mischief, which must always happen when the government of a nation depends upon the caprice of the ignorant hair-brained vulgar; that it was in the power of the most profligate member of the commonwealth, provided he was endowed with eloquence, to ruin the most deserving, by a desperate exertion of his talents upon the populace, who had been often persuaded to act in the most ungrateful and imprudent manner, against the greatest patriots that their country had produced: and finally, he averred, that the liberal arts and sciences had never flourished so much in a republick, as under the encouragement and protection of absolute power; witness the Augustan age, and the reign of Lewis the Fourteenth; nor was it to be supposed, that genius and merit could ever be so amply recompensed by the individuals,

viduals, or diſtracted councils of a commonwealth, as by the generoſity and magnificence of one, who had the whole treaſures at his own command.

Peregrine, who was pleaſed to find the conteſt grow warm, obſerved that there ſeemed to be a good deal of truth in what Mr. Jolter advanced: and the painter, whoſe opinion began to waver, looked with a face of expectation at his friend, who modelling his features into an expreſſion of exulting diſdain, aſked of his antagoniſt, if he did not think that very power of rewarding merit, enabled an abſolute prince to indulge himſelf in the moſt arbitrary licence over the lives and fortunes of his people. Before the governor had time to anſwer this queſtion, Pallet broke forth into an exclamation of—'By the Lord! that is certainly fact; egad! that was a home thruſt, doctor.' When Mr. Jolter, chaſtiſing this ſhallow intruder with a contemptuous look, affirmed, that though ſupreme power furniſhed a good prince with the means of exerting his virtues, it would not ſupport a tyrant in the exercise of cruelty and oppreſſion; becauſe in all nations the genius of the people muſt be conſulted by their governors, and the burden proportioned to the ſhoulders on which it is laid. 'Elſe, what follows?' ſaid the phyſician. 'The conſequence is plain,' replied the governor; 'inſurrection, revolt, and his own deſtruction: for it is not to be ſuppoſed that the ſubjects of any nation would be ſo abject and puſillanimous, as to neglect the means which Heaven hath put in their power for their own preſervation.'—'Gadzooks! you're in the right, Sir,' cried Pallet; 'that, I grant you, muſt be confeſſed. Doctor, I'm afraid we have got into the wrong box.' This ſon of Pæan, however, far from being of his friend's opinion, obſerved, with an air of triumph, that he would not only demonſtrate the ſophiſtry of the gentleman's laſt allegation, by argument and facts, but even confute him with his own words. Jolter's eyes kindling at this preſumptuous declaration, he told his antagoniſt, while his lip quivered with reſentment, that if his arguments were no better than his breeding,

breeding, he was sure he would make very few converts to his opinion; and the doctor, with all the insolence of triumph, advised him to beware of disputes for the future, until he should have made himself more master of his subject.

Peregrine both wished and hoped to see the disputants proceed to arguments of more weight and conviction; and the painter, dreading the same issue, interposed with the usual exclamation of—'For God's sake, gentlemen!' when the governor rose from table in great dudgeon, and left the room, muttering some ejaculation, of which the word coxcomb only could be distinctly heard. The physician being thus left master of the field of battle, was complimented on his victory by Peregrine; and so elevated by his success, that he declaimed a full hour on the absurdity of Jolter's proposition, and the beauty of the democratick administration; canvassed the whole scheme of Plato's republick, with many quotations from that ideal author, touching the *to kalon*; from thence he made a transition to the moral sense of Shaftesbury, and concluded his harangue with the greatest part of that frothy writer's rhapsody, which he repeated with all the violence of enthusiastick agitation; to the unspeakable satisfaction of his entertainer, and the unutterable admiration of Pallet, who looked upon him as something supernatural and divine. So intoxicated was this vain young man with the ironical praises of Pickle, that he forthwith shook off all reserve; and having professed a friendship for our hero, whose taste and learning he did not fail to extol, intimated in plain terms, that he was the only person in these latter ages, who possessed that sublime genius, that portion of divinity or *Ti Theion*, which immortalized the Grecian poets; that as Pythagoras affirmed the spirit of Euphorbus had transmigrated into his body, he, the doctor, was strangely possessed with the opinion that he himself was inspired by the soul of Pindar; because, making allowance for the difference of languages in which they wrote, there was a surprizing affinity between his own works and those of

that

that celebrated Theban; and as a confirmation of this truth, he immediately produced a sample of each, which though in spirit and versification as different as the Odes of Horace and our present poet-laureat, Peregrine did not scruple to pronounce altogether congenial; notwithstanding the violence he by this sentence offered to his own conscience, and a certain alarm of his pride, that was weak enough to be disturbed by the physician's ridiculous vanity and presumption, which, not contented with displaying his importance in the world of taste and polite literature, manifested itself in arrogating certain material discoveries in the province of physick, which could not fail to advance him to the highest pinnacle of that profession, considering the recommendation of his other talents, together with a liberal fortune which he inherited from his father.

CHAP. X.

The Doctor prepares an Entertainment in the Manner of the Ancients, which is attended with divers ridiculous Circumstances.

IN a word, our young gentleman, by his insinuating behaviour, acquired the full confidence of the doctor, who invited him to an entertainment, which he intended to prepare in the manner of the ancients. Pickle, struck with this idea, eagerly embraced the proposal, which he honoured with many encomiums, as a plan in all respects worthy of his genius and apprehension; and the day was appointed at some distance of time, that the treater might have leisure to compose certain pickles and confections which were not to be found among the culinary preparations of these degenerate days.

With a view of rendering the physician's taste more conspicuous, and extracting from it the more diversion, Peregrine proposed that some foreigners should partake of the banquet; and the task being left to his care and discretion, he actually bespoke the company of a French marquis, an Italian count, and a German baron; whom he knew to be egregious coxcombs, and therefore more likely to enhance the joy of the entertainment.

Accordingly, the hour being arrived, he conducted them to the hotel where the phyſician lodged, after having regaled their expectations with an elegant meal in the genuine old Roman taſte; and they were received by Mr. Pallet, who did the honours of the houſe, while his friend ſuperintended the cook below. By this communicative painter, the gueſts underſtood that the doctor had met with numerous difficulties in the execution of his deſign; that no fewer than five cooks had been diſmiſſed, becauſe they could not prevail upon their own conſciences to obey his directions in things that were contrary to the preſent practice of their art; and that although he had at laſt engaged a perſon, by an extraordinary premium, to comply with his orders, the fellow was ſo aſtoniſhed, mortified, and incenſed, at the commands he had received, that his hair ſtood on end, and he begged on his knees to be releaſed from the agreement he had made: but finding that his employer inſiſted upon the performance of his contract, and threatened to introduce him to the commiſſaire if he ſhould flinch from the bargain, he had, in the diſcharge of his office, wept, ſung, curſed, and capered, for two whole hours without intermiſſion.

While the company liſtened to this odd information, by which they were prepoſſeſſed with ſtrange notions of the dinner, their ears were invaded by a piteous voice, that exclaimed in French, 'For the love of God! dear Sir; for the paſſion of Jeſus Chriſt! ſpare me the mortification of the honey and oil!' Their ears ſtill vibrated with the ſound, when the doctor entering, was by Peregrine made acquainted with the ſtrangers; to whom he, in the tranſports of his wrath, could not help complaining of the want of complaiſance he had found in the Pariſian vulgar, by which his plan had been almoſt entirely ruined and ſet aſide. The French marquis, who thought the honour of his nation was concerned, at this declaration, profeſſed his ſorrow for what had happened, ſo contrary to the eſtabliſhed character of the people, and undertook to ſee the delinquents ſe-

verely

verely puniſhed, provided he could be informed of their names or places of abode. The mutual compliments that paſſed on this occaſion were ſcarce finiſhed, when a ſervant coming into the room, announced dinner; and the entertainer led the way into another apartment, where they found a long table, or rather two boards joined together, and furniſhed with a variety of diſhes, the ſteams of which had ſuch evident effect upon the nerves of the company, that the marquis made frightful grimaces, under pretence of taking ſnuff; the Italian's eyes watered, the German's viſage underwent ſeveral diſtortions of features; our hero found means to exclude the odour from his ſenſe of ſmelling, by breathing only through his mouth; and the poor painter running into another room, plugged his noſtrils with tobacco. The doctor himſelf, who was the only perſon then preſent whoſe organs were not diſcompoſed, pointing to a couple of couches placed on each ſide the table, told his gueſts that he was ſorry he could not procure the exact *triclinia* of the ancients, which were ſomewhat different from theſe conveniencies, and deſired they would have the goodneſs to repoſe themſelves without ceremony, each in his reſpective couchette, while he and his friend Mr. Pallet would place themſelves upright at the ends, that they might have the pleaſure of ſerving thoſe that lay along. This diſpoſition, of which the ſtrangers had no previous idea, diſconcerted and perplexed them in a moſt ridiculous manner; the marquis and baron ſtood bowing to each other, on pretence of diſputing the lower ſeat, but in reality, with a view of profiting by the example of one another, for neither of them underſtood the manner in which they were to loll; and Peregrine, who enjoyed their confuſion, handed the count to the other ſide, where, with the moſt miſchievous politeneſs, he inſiſted upon his taking poſſeſſion of the upper place.

In this diſagreeable and ludicrous ſuſpenſe, they continued acting a pantomime of geſticulations, until the doctor earneſtly intreated them to wave all compli-

ment and form, left the dinner should be spoiled before the ceremonial could be adjusted. Thus conjured, Peregrine took the lower couch on the left hand side, laying himself gently down, with his face towards the table. The marquis, in imitation of this pattern, (though he would have much rather fasted three days than run the risk of discomposing his dress by such an attitude) stretched himself upon the opposite place reclining upon his elbow in a most painful and aukward situation, with his head raised above the end of the couch, that the œconomy of his hair might not suffer by the projection of his body. The Italian, being a thin limber creature, planted himself next to Pickle, without sustaining any misfortune, but that of his stocking being torn by a ragged nail of the seat, as he raised his legs on a level with the rest of his limbs. But the baron, who was neither so wieldy nor supple in his joints as his companions, flounced himself down with such precipitation, that his feet suddenly tilting up, came in furious contact with the head of the marquis, and demolished every curl in a twinkling, while his own skull, at the same instant, descended upon the side of his couch with such violence, that his periwig was struck off, and the whole room filled with pulvilio.

The drollery of distress that attended this disaster entirely vanquished the affected gravity of our young gentleman, who was obliged to suppress his laughter by cramming his handkerchief in his mouth; for the bare-headed German asking pardon with such ridiculous confusion, and the marquis admitting his apology with such rueful complaisance, were sufficient to awake the mirth of the quietist.

This misfortune being repaired as well as the circumstances of the occasion would permit, and every one settled according to the arrangement already described, the doctor graciously undertook to give some account of the dishes as they occurred, that the company might be directed in their choice; and with an air of infinite satisfaction thus began—' This here, gentlemen, is a boiled

boiled goose, served up in a sauce composed of pepper, lovage, coriander, mint, rue, anchovies, and oil! I wish for your sakes, gentlemen, it was one of the geese of Ferrara, so much celebrated among the ancients for the magnitude of their livers, one of which is said to have weighed upwards of two pounds; with this food, exquisite as it was, did the tyrant Heliogabalus regale his hounds. But I beg pardon, I had almost forgot the soup, which I hear is so necessary an article at all tables in France. At each end there are dishes of the salacacabia of the Romans; one is made of parsley, penny-royal, cheese, pine-tops, honey, vinegar, brine, eggs, cucumbers, onions, and hen livers; the other is much the same as the soup-maigre of this country. Then there is a loin of veal boiled with fennel and carraway-seed, on a pottage composed of pickle, oil, honey, and flour, and a curious hachis of the lights, liver and blood of an hare, together with a dish of roasted pigeons. Monsieur le Baron, shall I help you to a plate of this soup?" The German, who did not at all disapprove of the ingredients, assented to the proposal, and seemed to relish the composition; while the marquis, being asked by the painter which of the *silly-kickabys* he chose, was in consequence of his desire accommodated with a portion of the soup-maigre; and the count, in lieu of spoon-meat, of which he said he was no great admirer, supplied himself with a pigeon, therein conforming to the choice of our young gentleman, whose example he determined to follow through the whole course of the entertainment.

The Frenchman having swallowed the first spoonful, made a full pause; his throat swelled, as if an egg had stuck in his gullet, his eyes rolled, and his mouth underwent a series of involuntary contractions and dilatations. Pallet, who looked stedfastly at this connoisseur, with a view of consulting his taste, before he himself would venture upon the soup, began to be disturbed at these emotions, and observed with some concern, that the poor gentleman seemed to be going into a fit; when

Peregrine aſſured him, that theſe were ſymptoms of extaſy, and for farther confirmation, aſked the marquis how he found the ſoup. It was with infinite difficulty that his complaiſance could ſo far maſter his diſguſt, as to enable him to anſwer, 'Altogether excellent, upon my honour!' And the painter being certified of his approbation, lifted the ſpoon to his mouth without ſcruple; but far from juſtifying the eulogium of his taſter, when this precious compoſition diffuſed itſelf upon his palate, he ſeemed to be deprived of all ſenſe and motion, and ſat like the leaden ſtatue of ſome river god, with the liquor flowing out at both ſides of his mouth.

The doctor, alarmed at this indecent phenomenon, earneſtly enquired into the cauſe of it; and when Pallet recovered his recollection, and ſwore that he would rather ſwallow porridge made of burning brimſtone, than ſuch an infernal meſs as that which he had taſted; the phyſician, in his own vindication, aſſured the company, that, except the uſual ingredients, he had mixed nothing in the ſoup but ſome ſal-armoniac inſtead of the ancient nitrum, which could not now be procured; and appealed to the marquis, whether ſuch a ſuccedaneum was not an improvement of the whole. The unfortunate petit-maitre, driven to the extremity of his condeſcenſion, acknowledged it to be a maſterly refinement; and deeming himſelf obliged, in point of honour, to evince his ſentiments by his practice, forced a few more mouthfuls of this diſagreeable potion down his throat, till his ſtomach was ſo much offended, that he was compelled to ſtart up of a ſudden; and, in the hurry of his elevation, overturned his plate into the boſom of the baron. The emergency of his occaſions would not permit him to ſtay and make apologies for this abrupt behaviour; ſo that he flew into another apartment, where Pickle found him puking, and croſſing himſelf with great devotion; and a chair, at his deſire, being brought to the door, he ſlipped into it more dead than alive, conjuring his friend Pickle to

make

make his peace with the company, and in particular excuſe him to the baron, on account of the violent fit of illneſs with which he had been ſeized. It was not without reaſon that he employed a mediator; for when our hero returned to the dining-room, the German got up, and was under the hands of his own lacquey, who wiped the greaſe from a rich embroidered waiſtcoat, while he, almoſt frantick with his misfortune, ſtamped upon the ground, and in High Dutch curſed the unlucky banquet, and the impertinent entertainer, who all this time, with great deliberation, conſoled him for the diſaſter, by aſſuring him, that the damage might be repaired with ſome oil of turpentine and a hot iron. Peregrine, who could ſcarce refrain from laughing in his face, appeaſed his indignation, by telling him how much the whole company, and eſpecially the marquis, was mortified at the accident; and the unhappy ſalacacabia being removed, the places were filled with two pies, one of dormice liquored with ſyrup of white poppies, which the doctor had ſubſtituted in the room of toaſted poppy-ſeed, formerly eaten with honey, as a deſert; and the other compoſed of a hock of pork baked in honey.

Pallet hearing the firſt of theſe diſhes deſcribed, lifted up his hands and eyes, and with ſigns of loathing and amazement pronounced, ‘ A pye made of dormice and ſyrup of poppies; Lord in heaven! what beaſtly fellows thoſe Romans were!’ His friend checked him for his irreverent exclamation with a ſevere look, and recommended the veal, of which he himſelf chearfully ate, with ſuch encomiums to the company, that the baron reſolved to imitate his example, after having called for a bumper of Burgundy, which the phyſician, for his ſake, wiſhed to have been the true wine of Falernum. The painter ſeeing nothing elſe upon the table which he would venture to touch, made a merit of neceſſity, and had recourſe to the veal alſo; although he could not help ſaying, that he would not give one ſlice of the roaſt-beef of Old England for all the dainties of a Ro-

man

man emperor's table. But all the doctor's invitations and aſſurances could not prevail upon his gueſts to honour the hachis and the gooſe; and that courſe was ſucceeded by another, in which he told them were divers of thoſe diſhes, which among the ancients had obtained the appellation of *politeles*, or magnificent. 'That which ſmoaks in the middle,' ſaid he, 'is a ſow's ſtomach, filled with a compoſition of minced pork, hog's brains, eggs, pepper, cloves, garlick, anniſeed, rue, ginger, oil, wine, and pickle. On the right-hand ſide are the teats and belly of a ſow, juſt farrowed, fried with ſweet wine, oil, flour, lovage, and pepper. On the left is a fricaſſee of ſnails, fed, or rather purged, with milk. At that end next Mr. Pallet are fritters of pompions, lovage, origanum, and oil; and here are a couple of pullets, roaſted and ſtuffed in the manner of Appicius.'

The painter, who had by wry faces teſtified his abhorrence of the ſow's ſtomach, which he compared to a bagpipe, and the ſnails which had undergone purgation, no ſooner heard him mention the roaſted pullets, than he eagerly ſolicited a wing of the fowl; upon which the doctor deſired he would take the trouble of cutting them up, and accordingly ſent them round, while Mr. Pallet tucked the table-cloth under his chin, and brandiſhed his knife and fork with ſingular addreſs; but ſcarce were they ſet down before him, when the tears ran down his cheeks, and he called aloud, in a manifeſt diſorder, 'Z——ds! this is the eſſence of a whole bed of garlick!' That he might not, however, diſappoint or diſgrace the entertainer, he applied his inſtruments to one of the birds; and when he opened up the cavity, was aſſaulted by ſuch an irruption of intolerable ſmells, that, without ſtaying to diſengage himſelf from the cloth, he ſprung away, with an exclamation of—'Lord Jeſus!' and involved the whole table in havock, ruin, and confuſion.

Before Pickle could accompliſh his eſcape, he was ſauced with the ſyrup of the dormouſe-pye, which

went to pieces in the general wreck; and as for the Italian count, he was overwhelmed by the fow's ftomach, which burfting in the fall, difcharged its contents upon his leg and thigh, and fcalded him fo miferably, that he fhrieked with anguifh, and grinned with a moft ghaftly and horrible afpect.

The baron, who fat fecure without the vortex of this tumult, was not at all difpleafed at feeing his companions involved in fuch a calamity as that which he had already fhared; but the doctor was confounded with fhame and vexation. After having prefcribed an application of oil to the count's leg, he expreffed his forrow for the mifadventure, which he openly afcribed to want of tafte and prudence in the painter, who did not think proper to return, and make an apology in perfon; and protefted that there was nothing in the fowls which could give offence to a fenfible nofe, the ftuffing being a mixture of pepper, lovage, and affafœtida, and the fauce confifting of wine and herring-pickle, which he had ufed inftead of the celebrated garum of the Romans; that famous pickle having been prepared fometimes of the fcombri, which were a fort of tunny-fifh, and fometimes of the filurus, or fhad-fifh: nay, he obferved that there was a third kind, called *garum bæmation*, made of the guts, gills, and blood of the thynnus.

The phyfician, finding it would be impracticable to re-eftablifh the order of the banquet, by prefenting again the difhes which had been difcompofed, ordered every thing to be removed, a clean cloth to be laid, and the defert to be brought in.

Meanwhile, he regretted his incapacity to give them a fpecimen of the alieus, or fifh-meals of the ancients; fuch as the jus diabaton, the conger-eel, which, in Galen's opinion, is hard of digeftion; the cornutta, or gurnard, defcribed by Pliny in his Natural Hiftory, who fays, the horns of many of them were a foot and a half in length; the mullet and lamprey, that were in the higheft eftimation of old; of which laft Julius Cæfar borrowed fix thoufand for one triumphal fupper.

He obſerved, that the manner of dreſſing them was deſcribed by Horace, in the account he gives of the entertainment to which Mæcenas was invited by the epicure Naſiedenus.

"*Affertur ſquillas inter Murena natantes, &c.*'

And told them, that they were commonly eaten with the *thus ſyriacum*, a certain anodyne and aſtringent ſeed, which qualified the purgative nature of the fiſh. Finally, this learned phyſician gave them to underſtand, that though this was reckoned a luxurious diſh in the zenith of the Roman taſte, it was by no means comparable, in point of expence, to ſome preparations in vogue about the time of that abſurd voluptuary Heliogabalus, who ordered the brains of ſix hundred oſtriches to be compounded in one meſs.

By this time the deſert appeared, and the company were not a little rejoiced to ſee plain olives in ſalt and water: but what the maſter of the feaſt valued himſelf upon, was a ſort of jelly, which he affirmed to be preferable to the hypotrimma of Heſychius, being a mixture of vinegar, pickle, and honey, boiled to a proper conſiſtence, and candied aſſafœtida, which he aſſerted, in contradiction to Aumulbergius and Liſter, was no other than the *laſer ſyriacum*, ſo precious, as to be ſold among the ancients to the weight of a ſilver-penny. The gentlemen took his word for the excellency of this gum, but contented themſelves with the olives, which gave ſuch an agreeable reliſh to the wine, that they ſeemed very well diſpoſed to conſole themſelves for the diſgraces they had endured; and Pickle, unwilling to loſe the leaſt circumſtance of entertainment that could be enjoyed in their company, went in queſt of the painter, who remained in his penitentials in another apartment, and could not be perſuaded to re-enter the banqueting-room until Peregrine undertook to procure his pardon from thoſe whom he had injured. Having aſſured him of his indulgence, our young gentleman led him in like a criminal, bowing on all hands with an air of humility and contrition; and particularly ad-

dreſſing

dreffing himfelf to the count, to whom he fwore in Englifh, as God was his Saviour, he had no intent to affront man, woman, or child; but was fain to make the beft of his way, that he might not give the honourable company caufe of offence, by obeying the dictates of nature in their prefence.

When Pickle interrupted this apology to the Italian, Pallet was forgiven in very polite terms, and even received into favour by his friend the doctor, in confequence of our hero's interceffion: fo that all the guefts forgot their chagrin, and paid their refpects fo pioufly to the bottle, that in a fhort time the Champaigne produced very evident effects in the behaviour of all prefent.

CHAP. XI.

The Painter is perfuaded to accompany Pickle to a Mafquerade in Woman's Apparel; is engaged in a troublefome Adventure, and with his Companion conveyed to the Baftile.

THE painter, at the requeft of Pickle, who had a defign upon the count's fenfe of hearing, favoured the company with the fong of Bumper Squire Jones, which yielded infinite fatisfaction to the baron; but affected the delicate ears of the Italian in fuch a manner, that his features expreffed aftonifhment and difquiet; and by his fudden and repeated journies to the door, it plainly appeared, that he was in the fame predicament with thofe who, as Shakfpear obferves, when the bagpipe fings in the nofe, cannot contain their urine for affection.

With a view, therefore, of vindicating mufick from fuch a barbarous tafte, Mr. Pallet had no fooner performed his tafk, than the count honoured his friends with fome favourite airs of his own country, which he warbled with infinite grace and expreffion, though they had not energy fufficient to engage the attention of the German, who fell faft afleep upon his couch, and fnored fo loud, as to interrupt and totally annul this ravifhing entertainment; fo that they were fain to have recourfe again to the glafs, which made fuch innovation upon the

the brain of the phyſician, that he ſung divers odes of Anacreon to a tune of his own compoſing, and held forth upon the muſick and recitative of the ancients with great erudition; while Pallet, having found means to make the Italian acquainted with the nature of his profeſſion, harangued upon painting with wonderful volubility, in a language which (it was well for his own credit) the ſtranger did not underſtand.

At length the doctor was ſeized with ſuch a qualm, that he begged Peregrine to lead him to his chamber; and the baron being waked, retired with the count.

Peregrine being rendered frolickſome with the wine he had drank, propoſed that he and Pallet ſhould go to a maſquerade, which he recollected was to be given that night. The painter did not want curioſity and inclination to accompany him, but expreſſed his apprehenſion of loſing him in the ball; an accident which could not fail to be very diſagreeable, as he was an utter ſtranger to the language and the town. To obviate this objection, the landlady, who was of their council, adviſed him to appear in a woman's dreſs, which would lay his companion under the neceſſity of attending him with more care, as he could not with decency detach himſelf from the lady whom he ſhould introduce; beſides, ſuch a ſuppoſed connection would hinder the ladies of pleaſure from accoſting, and employing their ſeducing arts upon a perſon already engaged.

Our young gentleman, foreſeeing abundance of diverſion in the execution of this project, ſeconded the propoſal with ſuch importunity and addreſs, that the painter allowed himſelf to be habited in a ſuit belonging to the landlady, who alſo procured for him a maſk of domino, while Pickle provided himſelf with a Spaniſh dreſs. In this diſguiſe, which they put on about eleven o'clock, did they, attended by Pipes, ſet out in a fiacre for the ball-room, into which Pickle led this ſuppoſititious female, to the aſtoniſhment of the whole company, who had never ſeen ſuch an uncouth figure in the appearance of a woman.

After

After they had taken a full view of all the remarkable masques, and the painter had been treated with a glass of liquor, his mischievous companion gave him the slip, and vanishing in an instant, returned with another mask and a domino over his habit, that he might enjoy Pallet's perplexity, and be at hand to protect him from insult.

The poor painter having lost his guide, was almost distracted with anxiety, and stalked about the room, in quest of him, with such huge strides and oddity of gesture, that he was followed by a whole multitude, who gazed at him as a preternatural phenomenon. This attendance encreased his uneasiness to such a degree, that he could not help uttering a soliloquy aloud, in which he cursed his fate for having depended upon the promise of such a wag; and swore, that if once he was clear of this scrape, he would not bring himself into such a premunire again for the whole kingdom of France.

Divers petit-maitres understanding the masque was a foreigner, who, in all probability, could not speak French, made up to him in their turns, in order to display their wit and address, and teazed him with several arch questions, to which he made no other answer than, '*No parley Francy*. Damn your chattering! Go about your business, can't ye?' Among the masques was a nobleman, who began to be very free with the supposed lady, and attempted to plunge his hand into her bosom: but the painter was too modest to suffer such indecent treatment; and when the gallant repeated his efforts in a manner still more indelicate, lent him such a box on the ear, as made the lights dance before him, and created such a suspicion of Pallet's sex, that the Frenchman swore he was either a male or hermaphrodite, and insisted upon a scrutiny, for the sake of his own honour, with such obstinacy of resentment, that the fictitious nymph was in imminent danger, not only of being exposed, but also of undergoing severe chastisement, for having made so free with the prince's ear; when Peregrine, who saw

and over-heard every thing that paſſed, thought it was high time to interpoſe; and accordingly, aſſerted his pretenſions to the inſulted lady, who was overjoyed at this proof of his protection.

The affronted gallant perſevered in demanding to know who ſhe was, and our hero as ſtrenuouſly refuſed to give him that ſatisfaction: ſo that high words enſued; and the prince threatening to puniſh his inſolence, the young gentleman, who was not ſuppoſed to know his quality, pointed to the place where his own ſword uſed to hang, and ſnapping his fingers in his face, laid hold on the painter's arm, and led him to another part of the room, leaving his antagoniſt to the meditations of his own revenge.

Pallet having chid his conductor for his barbarous deſertion, made him acquainted with the difficulty in which he had been involved, and flatly telling him, he would not put it into his power to give him the ſlip again, held faſt by his arm during the remaining part of the entertainment, to the no ſmall diverſion of the company, whoſe attention was altogether engroſſed in the contemplation of ſuch an aukward, ungainly, ſtalking apparition. At laſt, Pickle being tired of exhibiting this raree-ſhew, complied with the repeated deſires of his companion, and handed her into the coach; which he himſelf had no ſooner entered, than they were ſurrounded by a file of muſqueteers, commanded by an exempt, who ordering the coach-door to be opened, took his place with great deliberation, while one of his detachment mounted the box, in order to direct the driver.

Peregrine at once conceived the meaning of this arreſt, and it was well for him that he had no weapon wherewith to ſtand upon his defence; for ſuch was the impetuoſity and raſhneſs of his temper, that had he been armed, he would have run all riſks rather than ſurrender himſelf to any odds whatever; but Pallet imagining that the officer was ſome gentleman who had miſtaken their carriage for his own, deſired his

friend

friend to undeceive the ſtranger; and when he was informed of the real ſtate of their condition, his knees began to ſhake, his teeth to chatter, and he uttered a moſt doleful lamentation, importing his fear of being carried to ſome hideous dungeon of the Baſtile, where he ſhould ſpend the reſt of his days in miſery and horror, and never ſee the light of God's ſun, nor the face of a friend; but periſh in a foreign land, far removed from his family and connections. Pickle damned him for his puſillanimity, and the exempt hearing a lady bemoaning herſelf ſo piteouſly, expreſſed his mortification at being the inſtrument of giving her ſuch pain, and endeavoured to conſole them, by repreſenting the lenity of the French government, and the ſingular generoſity of the prince, by whoſe order they were apprehended.

Peregrine, whoſe diſcretion ſeemed to forſake him on all ſuch occaſions, exclaimed with great bitterneſs againſt the arbitrary adminiſtration of France, and inveighed with many expreſſions of contempt againſt the character of the offended prince, whoſe reſentment, far from being noble, he ſaid, was pitiful, ungenerous, and unjuſt. To this remonſtrance the officer made no reply, but ſhrugged up his ſhoulders in ſilent aſtoniſhment at the *hardieſſe* of the priſoner, and the fiacre was juſt on the point of ſetting out, when they heard the noiſe of a ſcuffle at the back of the coach, and the voice of Tom Pipes, pronouncing, 'I'll be damn'd if I do!' This truſty attendant had been deſired by one of the guard to deſcend from his ſtation in the rear, but as he reſolved to ſhare his maſter's fate, he took no notice of their intreaties until they were ſeconded by force; and that he endeavoured to repel with his heel, which he applied with ſuch energy to the jaws of the ſoldier who firſt came in contact with him, that they emitted a craſhing ſound like a dried walnut between the grinders of a templar in the pit. Exaſperated at this outrage, the other ſaluted Tom's poſteriors with his bayonet, which incommoded him ſo much, that he could

no longer keep his poſt, but, leaping upon the ground, gave his antagoniſt a chuck under the chin, and laid him upon his back, and then ſkipping over him with infinite agility, abſconded among the crowd of coaches, till he ſaw the guard mount before and behind upon his maſter's fiacre, which no ſooner ſet forward than he followed at a ſmall diſtance, to reconnoitre the place where Peregrine ſhould be confined.

After having proceeded ſlowly through many windings and turnings to a part of Paris, in which Pipes was an utter ſtranger, the coach ſtopped at a great gate, with a wicket in the middle, which being opened at the approach of the carriage, the priſoners were admitted, and the guard returning with the fiacre, Tom determined to watch in that place all night, that in the morning he might make ſuch obſervations as might be conducive to the enlargement of his maſter.

CHAP. XII.

By the Fidelity of Pipes, Jolter is informed of his Pupil's Fate. Confers with the Phyſician. Applies to the Ambaſſador, who with great Difficulty obtains the Diſcharge of the Priſoners, on certain Conditions.

THIS plan he executed notwithſtanding the pain of his wound, and the queſtions of the city guard both horſe and foot, to which he could make no other anſwer than, '*Anglois, Anglois!*' and as ſoon as it was light, taking an accurate ſurvey of the caſtle (for ſuch it ſeemed to be) into which Peregrine and Pallet had been conveyed, together with its ſituation in reſpect to the river, he went home to his lodgings, and waking Mr. Jolter, gave him an account of the adventure. The governor wrung his hands in the utmoſt grief and conſternation, when he heard this unfortunate piece of news; he did not doubt that his pupil was impriſoned in the Baſtile for life; and in the anguiſh of his apprehenſion, curſed the day on which he had undertaken to uperintend the conduct of ſuch an imprudent young man, who had by reiterated inſults provoked the vengeance of ſuch a mild forbearing adminiſtration. That

he

he might not, however, neglect any means in his power to extricate him from his present misfortune, he dispatched Thomas to the doctor, with an account of his companion's fate, that they might join their interest in behalf of the captives; and the physician being informed of what had happened, immediately dressed himself, and repaired to Jolter, whom he accosted in these words. 'Now, Sir, I hope you are convinced of your error, in asserting that oppression can never be the effect of arbitrary power. Such a calamity as this could never have happened under the Athenian democracy: nay, even when the tyrant Pisistratus got possession of that commonwealth, he durst not venture to rule with such absolute and unjust dominion. You shall see now that Mr. Pickle and my friend Pallet will fall a sacrifice to the tyranny of lawless power; and in my opinion we shall be accessary to the ruin of this poor enslaved people, if we bestir ourselves in demanding or imploring the release of our unhappy countrymen; as we may thereby prevent the commission of a flagrant crime, which would fill up the vengeance of Heaven against the perpetrators, and perhaps be the means of restoring a whole nation to the unspeakable fruition of freedom. For my own part, I should rejoice to see the blood of my father spilt in such a glorious cause; provided such a victim would furnish me with the opportunity of dissolving the chains of slavery, and vindicating that liberty which is the birthright of man. Then would my name be immortalized among the patriot heroes of antiquity, and my memory, like that of Harmodius and Aristogiton, be honoured by statues erected at the publick expence.' This rhapsody, which was delivered with great emphasis and agitation, gave so much offence to Jolter, that without speaking one word, he retired in great wrath to his own chamber, and the republican returned to his lodging, in full hope of his prognostick being verified in the death and destruction of Peregrine and the painter, which must give rise to some renowned revolution, wherein he himself would act a principal part.
But

But the governor, whose imagination was not quite so warm and prolifick, went directly to the ambassador, whom he informed of his pupil's situation, and besought to interpose with the French ministry, that he and the other British subject might obtain their liberty.

His excellency asked if Jolter could guess at the cause of his imprisonment, that he might be the better prepared to vindicate or excuse his conduct; but neither he nor Pipes could give the smallest hint of intelligence on that subject; though he furnished himself from Tom's own mouth with a circumstantial account of the manner in which his master had been arrested, as well as of his own behaviour, and the disaster he had received on that occasion. His lordship never doubted that Pickle had brought this calamity upon himself by some unlucky prank he had played at the masquerade; especially when he understood that the young gentleman had drank freely in the afternoon, and been so whimsical as to go thither with a man in woman's apparel: and he that same day waited on the French minister, in full confidence of obtaining his discharge; but met with more difficulty than he expected, the court of France being extremely punctilious in every thing that concerns a prince of the blood. The ambassador was therefore obliged to talk in very high terms, and though the present circumstances of the French politicks would not allow them to fall out with the British administration for trifles, all the favour he could procure, was a promise that Pickle should be set at liberty, provided he would ask pardon of the prince to whom he had given offence. His excellency thought this was but a reasonable condescension, supposing Peregrine to have been in the wrong; and Jolter was admitted to him in order to communicate and reinforce his lordship's advice, which was, that he should comply with the terms proposed. The governor, who did not enter this gloomy fortress without fear and trembling, found his pupil in a dismal apartment, void of all furniture but a stool and truckle-bed. The moment he

PEREGRINE PICKLE;
Peregrine Pickle while in prison caricaturing
the French Prince who ordered his confinement.

Printed for C. Cooke. May 4.1797.

was admitted, he perceived the youth whiſtling with great unconcern, and working with his pencil at the bare wall, on which he had delineated a ludicrous figure labelled with the name of the nobleman whom he had affronted, and an Engliſh maſtiff with his leg lifted up, in the attitude of making water in his ſhoe. He had been even ſo preſumptuous as to explain the device with ſatirical inſcriptions in the French language, which when Jolter peruſed, his hair ſtood on end with affright. The very turnkey was confounded and over-awed by the boldneſs of his behaviour, which he had never ſeen matched by any inhabitant of that place; and actually joined his friend in perſuading him to ſubmit to the eaſy demand of the miniſter. But our hero, far from embracing the counſel of this advocate, handed him to the door with great ceremony, and diſmiſſed him with a kick on the breech; and to all the ſupplications, and even tears of Jolter, made no other reply, than that he would ſtoop to no condeſcenſion, becauſe he had committed no crime; but would leave his caſe to the cognizance and exertion of the Britiſh court, whoſe duty it was to ſee juſtice done to its own ſubjects: he deſired, however, that Pallet, who was confined in another place, might avail himſelf of his own diſpoſition, which was ſufficiently pliable. But when the governor deſired to ſee his fellow-priſoner, the turnkey gave him to underſtand that he had received no orders relating to the lady, and therefore could not admit him into her apartment; though he was complaiſant enough to tell him that ſhe ſeemed very much mortified at her confinement, and at certain times behaved as if her brain was not a little diſordered. Jolter thus baffled in all his endeavours, quitted the Baſtile with a heavy heart, and reported his fruitleſs negociation to the ambaſſador, who could not help breaking forth into ſome acrimonious expreſſions againſt the obſtinacy and inſolence of the young man, who, he ſaid, deſerved to ſuffer for his folly. Nevertheleſs, he did not deſiſt from his repreſentations to the French

miniſtry,

ministry, which he found so unyielding, that he was obliged to threaten in plain terms, to make it a national concern, and not only write to his court for instructions, but even advise the council to make reprisals, and send some French gentlemen in London to the Tower.

This intimation had an effect upon the ministry at Versailles, who rather than run the risk of incensing a people whom it was neither their interest nor inclination to disoblige, consented to discharge the offenders, on condition that they should leave Paris in three days after their enlargement. This proposal was readily agreed to by Peregrine, who was now a little more tractable, and heartily tired of being cooped up in such an uncomfortable abode, for the space of three long days, without any sort of communication or entertainment, but that which his own imagination suggested.

CHAP. XIII.

Peregrine makes himself merry at the Expence of the Painter, who curses his Landlady, and breaks with the Doctor.

AS he could easily conceive the situation of his companion in adversity, he was unwilling to leave the place, until he had reaped some diversion from his distress; and with that view repaired to the dungeon of the afflicted painter, to which he had by this time free access. When he entered, the first object that presented itself to his eye, was so uncommonly ridiculous, that he could scarce preserve that gravity of countenance which he had affected in order to execute the joke he had planned. The forlorn Pallet sat upright in his bed, in a dishabille that was altogether extraordinary. He had laid aside his monstrous hoop, together with his stays, gown, and petticoat; wrapped his lappets about his head by way of night-cap, and wore his domino as a loose morning dress; his grizzled locks hung down about his lack-lustre eyes and tawney neck, in all the disorder of negligence; his grey beard bristled about half an inch, through the remains of the

paint

paint with which his visage had been bedaubed; and every feature of his face was lengthened to the most ridiculous expression of grief and dismay. Seeing Peregrine come in, he started up in a sort of frantick extasy, and running towards him with open arms, no sooner perceived the woeful appearance into which our young hero had modelled his physiognomy, than he stopped short all of a sudden, and the joy which had begun to take possession of his heart, was in a moment dispelled by the most rueful presages; so that he stood in a most ludicrous posture of dejection, like a malefactor at the Old Bailey, when sentence is about to be pronounced. Pickle taking him by the hand, heaved a profound sigh; and after having protested that he was extremely mortified at being pitched upon as the messenger of bad news, told him, with an air of sympathy and infinite concern, that the French court having discovered his sex, had resolved, in consideration of the outrageous indignity he offered in publick to a prince of the blood, to detain him in the Bastile a prisoner for life: and that this sentence was a mitigation obtained by the importunities of the British ambassador; the punishment ordained by law being no other than breaking alive upon the wheel. These tidings aggravated the horrors of the painter to such a degree, that he roared aloud, and skipped about the room in all the extravagance of distraction; taking God and man to witness, that he would rather suffer immediate death than endure one year's imprisonment in such a hideous place; and cursing the hour of his birth, and the moment on which he departed from his own country. 'For my own part,' said his tormentor, in a hypocritical tone, 'I was obliged to swallow the bitter pill of making submissions to the prince; who, as I had not presumed to strike him, received acknowledgments; in consequence of which, I shall be this day set at liberty, and there is even one expedient left for the recovery of your freedom. It is, I own, a disagreeable remedy, but one had better undergo a little mortification,

mortification, than be for ever wretched. Befides, upon fecond thoughts, I begin to imagine, that you will not, for fuch a trifle, facrifice yourfelf to the unceafing horrors of a folitary dungeon; efpecially as your condefcenfion will, in all probability, be attended with advantages which you could not otherwife enjoy.' Pallet interrupting him with great eagernefs, begged, for the love of God, that he would no longer keep him in the torture of fufpenfe, but mention that fame remedy, which he was refolved to fwallow, let it be never fo unpalatable.

Peregrine, having thus played upon his paffions of fear and hope, anfwered, that as the offence was committed in the habit of a woman, which was a difguife unworthy of the other fex, the French court was of opinion that the delinquent fhould be reduced to the neuter gender; fo that there was an alternative at his own option, by which he had it in his power to regain immediate freedom. 'What!' cried the painter, in defpair, 'become a finger? Gadzooks! and the devil, and all that! I'll rather lie ftill where I am, and let myfelf be devoured by vermin.' Then thrufting out his throat, 'Here is my windpipe,' faid he; 'be fo good, my dear friend, as to give it a flice or two; if you don't, I fhall one of thefe days be found dangling in my garters. What an unfortunate rafcal I am! What a blockhead, and a beaft, and a fool was I, to truft myfelf among fuch a barbarous ruffian race? Lord forgive you, Mr. Pickle, for having been the immediate caufe of my difafter; if you had ftood by me from the beginning, according to your promife, I fhould not have been feized by that coxcomb who has brought me to this pafs. And why did I put on this damn'd unlucky drefs? Lard curfe that chattering Jezebel of a landlady, who advifed fuch a prepofterous difguife! a difguife which hath not only brought me to this pafs, but alfo rendered me abominable to myfelf, and frightful to others; for when I this morning fignified to the turnkey, that I wanted to be fhaved, he

he looked at my beard with astonishment, and crossing himself, muttered his pater-noster, believing me (I suppose) to be a witch, or something worse. And Heaven confound that loathsome banquet of the ancients, which provoked me to drink too freely, that I might wash away the taste of that accursed sillikickaby.'

Our young gentleman, having heard his lamentation to an end, excused himself for his conduct, by representing that he could not possibly foresee the disagreeable consequences that attended it; and in the mean time, strenuously counselled him to submit to the terms of this enlargement. He observed, that he was now arrived at that time of life, when the lusts of the flesh should be entirely mortified within him, and his greatest concern ought to be the health of his soul, to which nothing could more effectually contribute than the amputation which was proposed: that his body, as well as his mind, would profit by the change, because he would have no dangerous appetite to gratify, and no carnal thought to divert him from the duties of his profession; and his voice, which was naturally sweet, would improve to such a degree, that he would captivate the ears of all the people of fashion and taste, and in a little time be celebrated under the appellation of the English Senesino.

These arguments did not fail to make impression upon the painter, who, nevertheless, started two objections to his compliance; namely, the disgrace of the punishment, and the dread of his wife. Pickle undertook to obviate these difficulties, by assuring him, that the sentence would be executed so privately, as never to transpire; and that his wife could not be so unconscionable, after so many years of cohabitation, as to take exceptions to an expedient by which she would not only enjoy the conversation of her husband, but even the fruits of those talents which the knife would so remarkably refine.

Pallet shook his head at his last remonstrance, as if he thought it would not be altogether convincing to his

his ſpouſe; but yielded to the propoſal, provided her conſent could be obtained. Juſt as he ſignified this condeſcenſion, the gaoler entered, and addreſſing himſelf to the ſuppoſed lady, expreſſed his ſatisfaction in having the honour to tell her, that ſhe was no longer a priſoner. As the painter did not underſtand one word of what he ſaid, Peregrine undertook the office of interpreter, and made his friend believe, the gaoler's ſpeech was no other than an intimation, that the miniſtry had ſent a ſurgeon to execute what was propoſed, and that the inſtruments and dreſſings were prepared in the next room. Alarmed and terrified at this ſudden appointment, he flew to the other end of the room, and ſnatching up an earthen chamber-pot, which was the only offenſive weapon in the place, put himſelf in a poſture of defiance, and with many oaths threatened to try the temper of the barber's ſkull, if he ſhould preſume to ſet his noſe within the apartment.

The gaoler, who little expected ſuch a reception, concluded that the poor gentlewoman had actually loſt her wits, and retreated with precipitation, leaving the door open as he went out. Upon which Pickle, gathering up the particulars of his dreſs with great diſpatch, crammed them into Pallet's arms, and taking notice that now the coaſt was clear, exhorted him to follow his footſteps to the gate, where a hackney-coach ſtood for his reception. There being no time for heſitation, the painter took his advice, and without quitting the utenſil, which in his hurry he forgot to lay down, ſallied out in the rear of our hero, with all that wildneſs of terror and impatience which may be reaſonably ſuppoſed to take poſſeſſion of a man who flies from perpetual impriſonment. Such was the tumult of his agitation, that his faculty of thinking was for the preſent utterly overwhelmed, and he ſaw no object but his conductor, whom he followed by a ſort of inſtinctive impulſe, without regarding the keepers and centinels, who, as he paſſed with his cloaths under one arm, and his chamber-pot brandiſhed above his head,

were confounded, and even difmayed at the ftrange apparition.

During the whole courfe of this irruption, he ceafed not to cry with great vociferation—'Drive, coachman! drive, in the name of God!' And the carriage had proceeded the length of a whole ftreet, before he manifefted the leaft fign of reflection, but ftared like the Gorgon's head, with his mouth wide open, and each particular hair crawling and twining like an animated ferpent. At length, however, he began to recover the ufe of his fenfes, and afked if Peregrine thought him now out of all danger of being retaken. This unrelenting wag, not yet fatisfied with the affliction he had impofed upon the fufferer, anfwered with an air of doubt and concern, that he hoped they would not be overtaken, and prayed to God they might not be retarded by a ftop of carriages. Pallet fervently joined in this fupplication; and they advanced a few yards farther, when the noife of a coach at full fpeed behind them invaded their ears; and Pickle having looked out of the window, withdrew his head in feeming confufion, and exclaimed, 'Lord have mercy upon us! I wifh that may not be a guard fent after us. Methinks I faw the muzzle of a fulfil fticking out of the coach.' The painter hearing thefe tidings, that inftant thruft himfelf half out at the window, with his helmet ftill in his hand, bellowing to the coachman as loud as he could roar, 'Drive! damn you, drive! to the gates of Jericho, and ends of the earth! Drive! you raggamuffin, you rafcallion, you hell-hound! drive us to the pit of hell, rather than we fhould be taken!'

Such a phantom could not pafs, without attracting the curiofity of the people, who ran to their doors and windows, in order to behold this object of admiration. With the fame view that coach, which was fuppofed to be in purfuit of him, ftopped juft as the windows of each happened to be oppofite; and Pallet looking behind, and feeing three men ftanding upon the footboard armed with canes, which his fear converted into

fufils, never doubted that his friend's fufpicion was juft; but, fhaking his jordan at the imaginary guard, fwore he would fooner die than part with his precious ware. The owner of the coach, who was a nobleman of the firft quality, miftook him for fome unhappy woman deprived of her fenfes; and ordering his coachman to proceed, convinced the fugitive, to his infinite joy, that this was no more than a falfe alarm. He was not, for all that, freed from anxiety and trepidation; but our young gentleman, fearing his brain would not bear a repetition of the fame joke, permitted him to gain his own lodgings without farther moleftation.

His landlady meeting him on the ftair, was fo affected at his appearance, that fhe fcreamed aloud, and betook herfelf to flight; while he, curfing her with great bitternefs, rufhed into the apartment with the doctor; who, inftead of receiving him with cordial embraces, and congratulating him upon his deliverance, gave evident tokens of umbrage and difcontent; and even plainly told him, he hoped to have heard that he and Mr. Pickle had acted the glorious part of Cato; an event which would have laid the foundation of fuch noble ftruggles, as could not fail to end in happinefs and freedom; and that he had already made fome progrefs in an ode that would have immortalized their names, and infpired the flame of liberty in every honeft breaft. 'There,' faid he, 'I would have proved, that great talents, and high fentiments of liberty, do reciprocally produce and affift each other; and illuftrated my affertions with fuch notes and quotations from the Greek writers, as would have opened the eyes of the moft blind and unthinking, and touched the moft callous and obdurate heart. *O fool! to think the man whofe ample mind muft grafp whatever yonder ftars furvey.*—Pray, Mr. Pallet, what is your opinion of that image of the mind's grafping the whole univerfe? For my own part, I cannot help thinking it the moft happy conception that ever entered my imagination.

The

The painter, who was not ſuch a flaming enthuſiaſt in the cauſe of liberty, could not brook the doctor's reflections, which he thought favoured a little too much of indifference and deficiency in point of private friendſhip; and therefore ſeized the preſent opportunity of mortifying his pride, by obſerving, that the image was, without all doubt, very grand and magnificent, but that he had been obliged for the idea to Mr. Bayes, in the Rehearſal, who values himſelf upon the ſame figure, conveyed in theſe words. 'But all theſe clouds, when by the eye of reaſon graſp'd,' &c. Upon any other occaſion, the painter would have triumphed greatly in this detection; but ſuch was the flutter and confuſion of his ſpirits, under the apprehenſion of being retaken, that without farther communication, he retreated to his own room, in order to reſume his own dreſs, which he hoped would alter his appearance in ſuch a manner, as to baffle all ſearch and examination; while the phyſician remained aſhamed and abaſhed, to find himſelf convicted of bombaſt by a perſon of ſuch contemptible talents. He was offended at this proof of his memory, and ſo much enraged at his preſumption in exhibiting it, that he could never forgive his want of reverence, and took every opportunity of expoſing his ignorance and folly in the ſequel. Indeed, the ties of private affection were too weak to engage the heart of this republican, whoſe zeal for the community had entirely ſwallowed up his concern for indiviuals. He looked upon particular friendſhip as a paſſion unworthy of his ample ſoul, and was a profeſſed admirer of L. Nanlius, Junius Brutus, and thoſe later patriots of the ſame name, who ſhut their ears againſt the cries of nature, and reſiſted all the dictates of gratitude and humanity.

CHAP. XIV.

Pallet conceives an hearty Contempt for his Fellow-Traveller, and attaches himself to Pickle, who neverthelefs perfecutes him with his mifchievous Talent upon the Road to Flanders.

IN the mean time, his companion, having employed divers pails full of water, in cleanfing himfelf from the fqualor of a jail, fubmitted his face to the barber, tinged his eye-brows with a fable hue, and being dreffed in his own cloaths, ventured to vifit Peregrine, who was ftill under the hands of his valet de chambre, and who gave him to underftand, that his efcape had been connived at, and that the condition of their deliverance was their departure from Paris in three days. The painter was tranfported with joy, when he learned that he ran no rifque of being retaken; and far from repining at the terms of his enlargement, would have willingly fet out on his return to England that fame afternoon; for the Baftile had made fuch an impreffion upon him, that he ftarted at the found of every coach, and turned pale at fight of a French foldier. In the fullnefs of his heart, he complained of the doctor's indifference, and related what had paffed at their meeting with evident marks of refentment and difrefpect; which were not at all diminifhed, when Jolter informed him of the phyfician's behaviour when he fent for him, to confer about the means of abridging their confinement. Pickle himfelf was incenfed at his want of bowels, and perceiving how much he had funk in the opinion of his fellow-traveller, refolved to encourage thefe fentiments of difguft, and occafionally foment the divifion to a downright quarrel, which he forefaw would produce fome diverfion, and perhaps expofe the poet's character in fuch a light, as would effectually punifh him for his arrogance and barbarity. With this view he levelled feveral fatirical jokes at the doctor's pedantry and want of tafte, which had appeared fo confpicuous

in

in the quotations he had got by heart from ancient authors, in his affected disdain of the best pictures in the world; which, had he been endowed with the least share of discernment, he could not have beheld with such insensibility; and lastly, in his ridiculous banquet, which none but an egregious coxcomb, devoid of all elegance and sense, would have prepared, or presented to rational beings. In a word, our young gentleman played the artillery of his wit against him with such success, that the painter seemed to wake from a dream, and went home with the most hearty contempt for the person he had formerly adored.

Instead of using the privilege of a friend, to enter his apartment without ceremony, he sent in his servant with a message, importing, that he intended to set out from Paris next day, in company with Mr. Pickle, and desiring to know whether or not he was, or would be prepared for the journey. The doctor, struck with the manner, as well as the matter, of this intimation, went immediately to Pallet's room, and demanded to know the cause of such a sudden determination, without his privity or concurrence; and when he understood the necessity of their affairs, rather than travel by himself, he ordered his baggage to be packed up, and signified his readiness to conform to the emergency of the case; though he was not at all pleased with the cavalier behaviour of Pallet, to whom he threw out some hints of his own importance, and the immensity of his condescension, in favouring him with such marks of regard. But by this time these insinuations had lost their effect upon the painter, who told him, with an arch sneer, that he did not at all question his learning and abilities, and particularly his skill in cookery, which he should never forget while his palate retained its function; but nevertheless advised him, for the sake of the degenerate eaters of these days, to spare a little of his sal armoniack in the next sillikickaby he should prepare; and bate somewhat of the devil's dung which he had so plenti-

fitly crammed into the roaſted fowls, unleſs he had a mind to convert his gueſts into patients, with a view of licking himſelf whole for the expence of the entertainment.

The phyſician, nettled at theſe ſarcaſms, eyed him with a look of indignation and diſdain; and being unwilling to expreſs himſelf in Engliſh, leſt, in the courſe of the altercation, Pallet ſhould be ſo much irritated as to depart without him, he vented his anger in Greek. The painter, though by the ſound he ſuppoſed this quotation to be Greek, complimented his friend upon his knowledge in the Welch language, and found means to rally him quite out of temper; ſo that he retired to his own chamber in the utmoſt wrath and mortification, and left his antagoniſt exulting over the victory he had won. While theſe things paſſed between theſe originals, Peregrine waited on the ambaſſador, whom he thanked for his kind interpoſition, acknowledging the indiſcretion of his own conduct, with ſuch appearance of conviction, and promiſes of reformation, that his excellency freely forgave him for all the trouble he had been put to on his account, fortified him with ſenſible advices, and aſſuring him of his continual favour and friendſhip, gave him, at parting, letters of introduction to ſeveral perſons of quality belonging to the Britiſh court.

Thus diſtinguiſhed, our young gentleman took leave of all his French acquaintance, and ſpent the evening with ſome of thoſe who had enjoyed the greateſt ſhare of his intimacy and confidence; while Jolter superintended his domeſtick concerns, and with infinite joy beſpoke a poſt chaiſe and horſe, in order to convey him from a place where he lived in continual apprehenſion of ſuffering by the dangerous diſpoſition of his pupil. Every thing being adjuſted according to their plan, they and their fellow-travellers next day dined together, and about four in the afternoon took their departure in two chaiſes, eſcorted by the valet de chambre, Pipes, and the doctor's lacquey on horſeback, well furniſhed

nifhed with arms and ammunition, in cafe of being attacked by robbers on the road. It was about eleven o'clock at night when they arrived at Senlis, which was the place at which they propofed to lodge, and where they were obliged to knock up the people of the inn, before they could have their fupper prepared. All the provifion in the houfe was but barely fufficient to furnifh one indifferent meal; however the painter confoled himfelf for the quantity with the quality of the difhes, one of which was a fricaffee of rabbit, a preparation that he valued above all the dainties that ever fmoaked upon the table of the fumptuous Heliogabalus.

He had no fooner expreffed himfelf to this effect, than our hero, who was almoft inceffantly laying traps for diverfion at his neighbours expence, laid hold on the declaration; and recollecting the ftory of Scipio and the muleteer in Gil Blas, refolved to perpetrate a joke upon the ftomach of Pallet, which feemed particularly well difpofed to an hearty fupper. He accordingly digefted his plan; and the company being feated at table, affected to gaze with peculiar eagernefs at the painter, who had helped himfelf to a large portion of the fricaffee, and began to fwallow it with infinite relifh. Pallet, notwithftanding the keennefs of his appetite, could not help taking notice of Pickle's demeanour; and making a fhort paufe in the exercife of his grinders, 'You are furprized,' faid he, 'to fee me make fo much difpatch; but I was extremely hungry, and this is one of the beft fricaffees I ever tafted: the French are very expert in thefe difhes, that I muft allow; and upon my confcience, I would never defire to eat a more delicate rabbit than this that lies upon my plate.'

Peregrine made no other reply to this encomium, than the repetition of the word *rabbit!* with a note of admiration, and fuch a fignificant fhake of the head, as effectually alarmed the other, who inftantly fufpended the action of his jaws, and with the morfel half chewed in his mouth, ftared round him with a certain ftolidity of

of apprehenſion, which is eaſier conceived than deſcribed, until his eyes encountered the countenance of Thomas Pipes; who being inſtructed, and poſted oppoſite to him for the occaſion, exhibited an arch grin, that compleated the painter's diſorder. Afraid of ſwallowing his mouthful, and aſhamed to diſpoſe of it any other way, he ſat ſome time in a moſt diſtreſſed ſtate of ſuſpenſe; and being queſtioned by Mr. Jolter touching his calamity, made a violent effort of the muſcles of his gullet, which with difficulty performed their office; and then, with great confuſion and concern, aſked if Mr. Pickle ſuſpected the rabbit's identity. The young gentleman aſſuming a myſterious air, pretended ignorance of the matter, obſerving that he was apt to ſuſpect all diſhes of that kind, ſince he had been informed of the tricks which were commonly played at inns in France, Italy, and Spain; and recounted that paſſage in Gil Blas, which we have hinted at above; ſaying, he did not pretend to be a connoiſſeur in animals, but the legs of the creature which compoſed that fricaſſee did not, in his opinion, reſemble thoſe of the rabbits he had uſually ſeen. This obſervation had an evident effect upon the features of the painter, who, with certain ſigns of loathing and aſtoniſhment, exclaimed, 'Lord Jeſus!' and appealed to Pipes for a diſcovery of the truth, by aſking if he knew any thing of the affair. Tom very gravely replied, that he did ſuppoſe the food was wholeſome enough, for he had ſeen the ſkin and feet of a ſpecial ram-cat, new flea'd, hanging upon the door of a ſmall pantry adjoining to the kitchen.

Before this ſentence was uttered, Pallet's belly ſeemed to move in contact with his back-bone, his colour changed, no part but the whites of his eyes were to be ſeen, he dropped his lower jaw, and fixing his hands in his ſides, reached with ſuch convulſive agonies, as amazed and diſconcerted the whole company; and what augmented his diſorder was the tenacious retention of his ſtomach, which abſolutely refuſed to part

with

with its contents, notwithſtanding all the energy of his abhorrence, which threw him into a cold ſweat, and almoſt into a ſwoon. Pickle, alarmed at his condition, aſſured him it was a genuine rabbit, and that he had tutored Pipes to ſay otherwiſe for the joke's ſake. But this confeſſion he conſidered as a friendly artifice of Pickle's compaſſion, and therefore it had little effect upon his conſtitution. By the aſſiſtance, however, of a large bumper of brandy, his ſpirits were recruited, and his recollection ſo far recovered, that he was able to declare, with divers contortions of face, that the diſh had a particular rankneſs of taſte, which he had imputed partly to the nature of the French coney, and partly to the compoſition of their ſauces; then he inveighed againſt the infamous practices of French publicans, attributing ſuch impoſition to their oppreſſive government, which kept them ſo neceſſitous, that they were tempted to exerciſe all manner of knavery upon their unwary gueſts.

Jolter, who could not find in his heart to let ſlip any opportunity of ſpeaking in favour of the French, told him, that he was a very great ſtranger to their police, elſe he would know, that if upon information to the magiſtrate it ſhould appear that any traveller, native or foreigner, has been impoſed upon or ill-treated by a publican, the offender would be immediately obliged to ſhut up his houſe, and if his behaviour had been notorious, he himſelf would be ſent to the gallies, without the leaſt heſitation: 'And as for the diſh which has been made the occaſion of your preſent diſorder,' ſaid he, 'I will take upon me to affirm it was prepared of a genuine rabbit, which was ſkinned in my preſence; and in confirmation of what I aſſert, though ſuch fricaſſees are not the favourites of my taſte, I will eat a part of this without ſcruple.' So ſaying, he ſwallowed ſeveral mouthfuls of the queſtioned coney, and Pallet ſeemed to eye it again with inclination; nay, he even reſumed his knife and fork, and being juſt on the point

of applying them, was ſeized with another qualm of apprehenſion, that broke out in an exclamation of, 'After all, Mr. Jolter, if it ſhould be a real ram-cat! —Lord have mercy upon me! here is one of the claws.' With theſe words he preſented the tip of a toe, of which Pipes had ſnapped off five or ſix from a duck that was roaſted, and purpoſely ſcattered them in the fricaſſee; and the governor could not behold this teſtimonial without ſymptoms of uneaſineſs and remorſe; ſo that he and the painter ſat ſilenced and abaſhed, and made faces at each other, while the phyſician, who hated them both, exulted over their affliction, bidding them be of good chear, and proceed with their meal; for he was ready to demonſtrate, that the fleſh of a cat was as nouriſhing and delicious as veal or mutton, provided they could prove that the ſaid cat was not of the boar-kind, and had fed chiefly on vegetable diet, or even confined its carnivorous appetite to rats and mice, which he affirmed to be dainties of exquiſite taſte and flavour. He ſaid, it was a vulgar miſtake, to think that all fleſh-devouring creatures were unfit to be eaten; witneſs the conſumption of ſwine and ducks, animals that delight in carnage as well as fiſh, and prey upon each other, and feed on bait and carrion; together with the demand for bear, of which the beſt hams in the world are made. He then obſerved that the negroes on the coaſt of Guinea, who are healthy and vigorous people, prefer cats and dogs to all other fare; and mentioned from hiſtory ſeveral ſieges, during which the inhabitants, who were blocked up, lived upon theſe animals, and had recourſe even to human fleſh, which to his certain knowledge, was in all reſpects preferable to pork; for, in the courſe of his ſtudies, he had, for the experiment's ſake, eaten a ſteak cut from the buttock of a perſon who had been hanged.

This diſſertation, far from compoſing, increaſed the diſquiet in the ſtomachs of the governor and painter, who hearing the laſt illuſtration, turned their eyes

upon the orator, at the same instant, with looks of horror and disgust; and the one muttering the term *cannibal*, and the other pronouncing the word *abomination*, they rose from table in a great hurry, and running towards another apartment, justled with such violence in the passage, that both were overturned by the shock, which also contributed to the effect of their nausea, that mutually defiled them as they lay.

CHAP. XV.

Nor is the Physician sacred from his Ridicule. They reach Arras, where our Adventurer engages in Play with two French Officers, who next Morning give the Landlord an interesting Proof of their Importance.

THE doctor remained sullen and dejected during the whole journey: not but that he attempted to recover his importance, by haranguing upon the Roman highways, when Mr. Jolter desired the company to take notice of the fine pavement upon which they travelled from Paris into Flanders; but Pallet, who thought he had now gained the ascendancy over the physician, exerted himself in maintaining the superiority he had acquired, by venting various sarcasms upon his self-conceit and affectation of learning, and even uttering puns and conundrums upon the remarks which the republican retailed. When he talked of the Flaminian Way, the painter questioned if it was better pavement than the *Fleminian* way on which they travelled; and the doctor having observed, that this road was made for the convenience of drawing the French artillery into Flanders, which was often the seat of war, his competitor in wit replied with infinite vivacity, 'There are more great guns than the French king knows of drawn along this causeway, doctor.'

Encouraged by the success of these efforts, which tickled the imagination of Jolter, and drew smiles (as he imagined) of approbation from our hero, he sported in many other equivoques of the same nature; and at dinner

dinner told the phyſician, that he was like the root of the tongue, as being curſedly down in the mouth.

By this time, ſuch was the animoſity ſubſiſting between thoſe quondam friends, that they never converſed together, except with a view of expoſing each other to the ridicule or contempt of their fellow-travellers. The doctor was at great pains to point out the folly and ignorance of Pallet in private to Peregrine, who was often conjured in the ſame manner by the painter, to take notice of the phyſician's want of manners and taſte. Pickle pretended to acquieſce in the truth of their mutual ſeverity, which indeed was extremely juſt, and by malicious inſinuations blew up their contention, with a view of bringing it to open hoſtility. But both ſeemed ſo averſe to deeds of mortal purpoſe, that for a long time his arts were baffled, and he could not ſpirit them up to any pitch of reſentment higher than ſcurrilous repartee.

Before they reached Arras, the city gates were ſhut, ſo that they were obliged to take up their lodgings at an indifferent houſe in the ſuburbs; where they found a couple of French officers, who had alſo rode poſt for Paris ſo far on their way to Liſle. Theſe gentlemen were about the age of thirty, and their deportment diſtinguiſhed by ſuch an air of inſolence, as diſguſted our hero; who nevertheleſs accoſted them politely in the yard, and propoſed that they ſhould ſup together. They thanked him for the honour of his invitation, which, however, they declined, upon pretence of having ordered ſomething for themſelves; but promiſed to wait upon him and his company immediately after their repaſt.

This they accordingly performed; and after having drank a few glaſſes of Burgundy, one of them aſked, if the young gentleman would for paſtime take a hand at quadrille. Peregrine eaſily divined the meaning of this propoſal, which was made with no other view than that of fleecing him and his fellow-travellers; for he well

well knew to what ſhifts a ſubaltern in the French ſervice is reduced, in order to maintain the appearance of a gentleman, and had reaſon to believe that moſt of them were ſharpers from their youth: but, as he depended a good deal upon his own penetration and addreſs, he gratified the ſtranger's deſire; and a party was inſtantly formed of the painter, the phyſician, the propoſer, and himſelf, the other officer having profeſſed himſelf utterly ignorant of the game; yet in the courſe of the play he took his ſtation at the back of Pickle's chair, which was oppoſite to his friend, on pretence of amuſing himſelf with ſeeing his manner of conducting the cards. The youth was not ſuch a novice but that he perceived the deſign of this palpable piece of behaviour: which, notwithſtanding, he overlooked for the preſent, with a view of flattering their hopes in the beginning, that they might be more effectually puniſhed by their diſappointment in the end.

The game was ſcarce begun, when by the reflection of a glaſs he diſcerned the officer at his back making ſigns to his companion; who, by theſe pre-concerted geſtures, was perfectly informed of the contents of Peregrine's hand, and of conſequence fortunate in the courſe of play.

Thus they were allowed to enjoy the fruits of their dexterity, until their money amounted to ſome Louis; when our young gentleman, thinking it high time to do himſelf juſtice, ſignified in very polite terms to the gentleman who ſtood behind him, that he could never play with eaſe and deliberation, when he was overlooked by any by-ſtander, and begged that he would have the goodneſs to be ſeated.

As this was a remonſtrance which the ſtranger could not with any ſhew of breeding reſiſt, he aſked pardon, and retired to the chair of the phyſician, who frankly told him, that it was not the faſhion of his country for one to ſubmit his hand to the peruſal of a ſpectator; and when, in conſequence of this rebuff, he wanted to quarter himſelf upon the painter, he was refuſed by a

wave of the hand, and ſhake of the head, with an exclamation of *Pardonnez moi!* which was repeated with ſuch emphaſis, as diſcompoſed his effrontery, and he found himſelf obliged to ſit down in a ſtate of mortification.

The odds being thus removed, fortune proceeded in her uſual channel; and though the Frenchman, deprived of his ally, endeavoured to practiſe divers ſtrokes of fineſſe, the reſt of the company obſerved him with ſuch vigilance and caution, as baffled all his attempts, and in a very little time he was compelled to part with his winnings: but having engaged in the match with an intention of taking all advantages, whether fair or unfair, that his ſuperior ſkill ſhould give him over the Engliſhman, the money was not refunded without a thouſand diſputes, in the courſe of which he eſſayed to intimidate his antagoniſt with high words, which were retorted by our hero with ſuch intereſt, as convinced him that he had miſtaken his man, and perſuaded him to make his retreat in quiet. Indeed, it was not without cauſe that they repined at the bad ſucceſs of their enterprize; becauſe, in all likelihood, they had nothing to depend upon for the preſent but their own induſtry, and knew not how to defray their expences on the road, except by ſome acquiſition of this kind.

Next morning they roſe at day-break, and reſolving to anticipate their fellow-lodgers, beſpoke poſt-horſes as ſoon as they could be admitted into the city; ſo that when our company appeared, their beaſts were ready in the yard; and they only waited to diſcuſs the bill, which they had ordered to be made out. The landlord of the inn preſented his carte with fear and trembling to one of thoſe ferocious cavaliers, who no ſooner caſt his eye upon the ſum-total, than he diſcharged a volley of dreadful oaths, and aſked if the king's officers were to be treated in that manner. The poor publican proteſted, with great humility, that he had the utmoſt reſpect for his majeſty, and every thing that belonged to him; and that, far from conſulting his own

intereſt,

intereſt; all that he deſired was, to be barely indemnified for the expence of their lodging.

This condeſcenſion ſeemed to have no other effect than that of encouraging their arrogance. They ſwore his extortion ſhould be explained to the commandant of the town, who would, by making him a publick example, teach other inn-keepers how to behave towards men of honour; and threatened with ſuch confidence of indignation, that the wretched landlord, dreading the conſequence of their wrath, implored pardon in the moſt abject manner, begging with many ſupplications, that he might have the pleaſure of lodging them at his own charge. This was a favour which he with great difficulty obtained; they chid him ſeverely for his impoſition, exhorted him to have more regard for his own conſcience, as well as for the convenience of his gueſts; and cautioning him in particular touching his behaviour to the gentlemen of the army, mounted their horſes, and rode off in great ſtate, leaving him very thankful for having ſo ſucceſsfully appeaſed the choler of two officers, who wanted either inclination or ability to pay their bill; for experience had taught him to be apprehenſive of all ſuch travellers, who commonly lay the landlord under contribution, by way of atonement for the extravagance of his demands, even after he has profeſſed his willingneſs to entertain them on their own terms.

CHAP. XVI.

Peregrine moralizes upon their Behaviour, which is condemned by the Doctor, and defended by the Governor. They arrive in Safety at Liſle, dine at an Ordinary, viſit the Citadel. The Phyſician quarrels with a North Briton, who is put in Arreſt.

THESE honourable adventurers being gone, Peregrine, who was preſent during the tranſaction, informed himſelf of the particulars from the mouth of the inn-keeper himſelf, who took God and the ſaints to witneſs, that he ſhould have been a loſer by their cuſtom, even if the bill had been paid; becauſe he was on

on his guard againſt their objections, and had charged every article at an under price: but ſuch was the authority of officers in France, that he durſt not diſpute the leaſt circumſtance of their will; for had the caſe come under the cognizance of the magiſtrate, he muſt in courſe have ſuffered by the maxims of their government, which never fail to abet the oppreſſion of the army; and beſides, run the riſk of incurring their future reſentment, which would be ſufficient to ruin him from top to bottom.

Our hero boiled with indignation at this inſtance of injuſtice and arbitrary power; and turning to his governor, aſked if this too was a proof of the happineſs enjoyed by the French people. Jolter replied, that every human conſtitution muſt in ſome things be imperfect; and owned, that in this kingdom gentlemen were more countenanced than the vulgar, becauſe it was to be preſumed, that their own ſentiments of honour and ſuperior qualifications would entitle them to this pre-eminence, which had alſo a retroſpective view to the merit of their anceſtors, in conſideration of which they were at firſt ennobled: but he affirmed, that the inn-keeper had miſrepreſented the magiſtracy, which in France never failed to puniſh flagrant outrages and abuſe, without reſpect of perſons.

The painter approved of the wiſdom of the French government, in bridling the inſolence of the mob, by which, he aſſured them, he had often ſuffered in his own perſon; having been often beſpattered by hackney-coachmen, joſtled by draymen and porters, and reviled in the moſt opprobrious terms by the watermen of London, where he had once loſt his bag and a conſiderable quantity of hair, which had been cut off by ſome raſcal in his paſſage through Ludgate, during the lord mayor's proceſſion. On the other hand, the doctor with greath warmth alledged, that thoſe officers ought to ſuffer death, or baniſhment at leaſt, for having plundered the people in this manner, which was ſo impudent and bare-faced, as plainly to prove they were

certain

certain of escaping with impunity, and that they were old offenders in the same degree of delinquency. He said, that the greatest man in Athens would have been condemned to perpetual exile, and seen his estate confiscated for publick use, had he dared in such a licentious manner to violate the rights of a fellow-citizen; and as for the little affronts to which a man may be subject, from the petulance of the multitude, he looked upon them as glorious indications of liberty, which ought not to be repressed, and would at any time rejoice to find himself overthrown in a kennel by the insolence of a son of freedom, even though the fall should cost him a limb: adding, by way of illustration, that the greatest pleasure he ever enjoyed, was in seeing a dustman wilfully overturn a gentleman's coach, in which two ladies were bruised, even to the danger of their lives. Pallet, shocked at the extravagance of this declaration, 'If that be the case,' said he, 'I wish you may see every bone in your body broke, by the first carman you meet in the streets of London.'

This argument being discussed, and the reckoning discharged without any deduction, although the landlord, in stating the articles, had an eye to the loss he had sustained by his own countrymen, they departed from Arras, and arrived in safety at Lisle, about two o'clock in the afternoon.

They had scarce taken possession of their lodgings, in a large hotel on the Grande Place, when the innkeeper gave them to understand, that he kept an ordinary below, which was frequented by several English gentlemen who resided in town, and that dinner was then upon the table. Peregrine, who seized all opportunities of observing new characters, persuaded his company to dine in publick; and they were accordingly conducted to the place, where they found a mixture of Scotch and Dutch officers, who had come from Holland to learn their exercises at the academy, and some gentlemen in the French service, who were upon garrison duty in the citadel. Among these last was a

perſon about the age of fifty, of a remarkable genteel air and polite addreſs, dignified with a Malteſe croſs, and diſtinguiſhed by the particular veneration of all thoſe who knew him. When he underſtood that Pickle and his friends were travellers, he accoſted the youth in Engliſh, which he ſpoke tolerably well; and as they were ſtrangers, offered to attend them in the afternoon to all the places worth ſeeing in Liſle. Our hero thanked him for his exceſs of politeneſs, which (he ſaid) was peculiar to the French nation: and ſtruck with his engaging appearance, induſtriouſly courted his converſation, in the courſe of which he learned, that this chevalier was a man of good ſenſe and great experience, that he was perfectly well acquainted with the greateſt part of Europe, had lived ſome years in England, and was no ſtranger to the conſtitution and genius of that people.

Having dined, and drank to the healths of the Engliſh and French kings, two fiacres were called, in one of which the knight, with one of his companions, the governor, and Peregrine, ſeated themſelves; the other being occupied by the phyſician, Pallet, and two Scottiſh officers, who propoſed to accompany them in their circuit. The firſt place they viſited was the citadel, round the ramparts of which they walked, under the conduct of the knight, who explained with great accuracy the intention of every particular fortification belonging to that ſeemingly impregnable fortreſs; and when they had ſatisfied their curioſity, took coach again, in order to view the arſenal, which ſtands in another quarter of the town: but, juſt as Pickle's carriage had croſſed the Promenade, he heard his own name bawled aloud by the painter; and ordering the fiacre to ſtop, ſaw Pallet with one half of his body thruſt out at the window of the other coach, crying with a terrified look, 'Mr. Pickle, Mr. Pickle! for the love of God, halt, and prevent bloodſhed, elſe here will be carnage and cutting of throats!' Peregrine, ſurprized at this exclamation, immediately alighted; and advancing

ing to the other vehicle, found one of their military companions ſtanding upon the ground, at the farther ſide of the coach, with his ſword drawn, and fury in his countenance; and the phyſician, with a quivering lip and haggard aſpect, ſtruggling with the other, who had interpoſed in the quarrel, and detained him in his place.

Our young gentleman, upon enquiry, found that this animoſity had ſprung from a diſpute that happened upon the ramparts, touching the ſtrength of the fortification, which the doctor, according to cuſtom, undervalued, becauſe it was a modern work; ſaying, that by the help of the military engines uſed among the ancients, and a few thouſands of pioneers, he would engage to take it in leſs than ten days after he ſhould ſit down before it. The North Briton, who was as great a pedant as the phyſician, having ſtudied fortification, and made himſelf maſter of Cæſar's Commentaries and Polybius, with the obſervations of Folard, affirmed, that all the methods of beſieging practiſed by the ancients, would be utterly ineffectual againſt ſuch a plan as that of the citadel of Liſle; and began to compare the Vineæ, Aggeres, Arietes, Scorpiones, and Catapultæ of the Romans, with the trenches, mines, batteries, and mortars, uſed in the preſent art of war. The republican, finding himſelf attacked upon what he thought his ſtrong ſide, ſummoned all his learning to his aid; and deſcribing the famous ſiege of Platæa, happened to miſquote a paſſage of Thucydides, in which he was corrected by the other, who having been educated for the church, was alſo a connoiſſeur in the Greek language. The doctor, incenſed at being detected in ſuch a blunder in preſence of Pallet, who he knew would promulgate his ſhame, told the officer, with great arrogance, that his objection was frivolous, and that he muſt not pretend to diſpute on theſe matters with one who had conſidered them with the utmoſt accuracy and care. His antagoniſt, piqued at this ſupercilious inſinuation, replied with great heat, that for

for aught he knew, the doctor might be a very expert apothecary, but that in the art of war, and knowledge in the Greek tongue, he was no other that an ignorant pretender. This asseveration produced an answer full of virulence, including a national reflection upon the soldier's country; and the contention rose to mutual abuse, when it was suppressed by the admonitions of the other two, who begged they would not expose themselves in a strange place, but behave themselves like fellow-subjects and friends. They accordingly ceased reviling each other, and the affair was seemingly forgot; but after they had resumed their places in the coach, the painter unfortunately asked the meaning of the word *tortise*, which he had heard them mention among the Roman implements of war. This question was answered by the physician, who described the nature of this expedient so little to the satisfaction of the officer, that he contradicted him flatly, in the midst of his explanation; a circumstance which provoked the republican to such a degree, that in the temerity of his passion, he uttered the epithet *impertinent scoundrel!* which was no sooner pronounced, than the Caledonian made manual application to his nose, and leaping out of the coach, stood waiting for him on the plain; while he (the physician) made feeble efforts to join him, being easily retained by the other soldier; and Pallet, dreading the consequence in which he himself might be involved, bellowed aloud for prevention.

Our hero endeavoured to quiet the commotion, by representing to the Scot, that he had already taken satisfaction for the injury he had received; and telling the doctor that he had deserved the chastisement which was inflicted upon him: but the officer (encouraged perhaps by the confusion of his antagonist) insisted upon his asking pardon for what he had said; and the doctor, believing himself under the protection of his friend Pickle, far from agreeing to such concession, breathed nothing but defiance and revenge: so that the chevalier, in order to prevent mischief, put the soldier

under arreſt, and ſent him to his lodgings, under the care of the other French gentleman and his own companion; they being alſo accompanied by Mr. Jolter, who having formerly ſeen all the curioſities of Liſle, willingly ſurrendered his place to the phyſician.

CHAP. XVII.

Pickle engages with the Knight of Malta, in a Converſation upon the Engliſh Stage, which is followed by a Diſſertation on the Theatres of the Ancients by the Doctor.

THE reſt of the company proceeded to the arſenal, which having viewed, together with ſome remarkable churches, they, in their return, went to the comedy, and ſaw the Cid of Corneille tolerably well repreſented. In conſequence of this entertainment, the diſcourſe at ſupper turned upon dramatick performances; and all the objections of Monſ. de Scudery to the piece they had ſeen acted, together with the deciſion of the French academy, were canvaſſed and diſcuſſed. The knight was a man of letters and taſte, and particularly well acquainted with the ſtate of the Engliſh ſtage; ſo that when the painter boldly pronounced ſentence againſt the French manner of acting, on the ſtrength of having frequented a Covent-Garden club of criticks, and being often admitted by virtue of an order into the pit, a compariſon immediately enſued, not between the authors, but the actors of both nations, to whom the chevalier and Peregrine were no ſtrangers. Our hero, like a good Engliſhman, made no ſcruple of giving the preference to the performers of his own country; who, he alledged, obeyed the genuine impulſes of nature, in exhibiting the paſſions of the human mind; and entered ſo warmly into the ſpirit of their ſeveral parts, that they often fancied themſelves the very heroes they repreſented. Whereas, the action of the Pariſian players, even in their moſt intereſting characters, was generally ſuch an extravagance in voice and geſture, as is no where to be obſerved but on the ſtage. To illuſtrate this aſſertion, he availed himſelf of his talent, and mimicked the

manner and voice of all the principal performers, male and female, belonging to the French comedy, to the admiration of the chevalier; who having complimented him upon this ſurprizing modulation, begged leave to diſſent in ſome particulars from the opinion he had avowed. ‘ That you have good actors in England,’ ſaid he, ‘ it would be unjuſt and abſurd in me to deny; your theatre is adorned by one woman, whoſe ſenſibility and ſweetneſs of voice is ſuch as I have never obſerved on any other ſtage; ſhe has, beſides, an elegance of perſon and expreſſion of features, that wonderfully adapt her for the moſt engaging characters of your beſt plays; and I muſt freely own that I have been as highly delighted and as deeply affected by a Monimia and Belvidera at London, as ever I was by a Cornelia and Cleopatra at Paris. Your favourite actor is a ſurprizing genius. You can, moreover, boaſt of ſeveral comick actors who are perfect maſters of buffoonery and grimace; though, to be free with you, I think in theſe qualifications you are excelled by the players of Amſterdam. Yet one of your gracioſo's I cannot admire, in all the characters he aſſumes. His utterance is a continual ſing-ſong, like the chanting of veſpers, and his action reſembles that of heaving ballaſt into the hold of a ſhip. In his outward deportment, he ſeems to have confounded the ideas of dignity and inſolence of mien; acts the crafty, cool, deſigning Crookback, as a loud, ſhallow, bluſtering hector; in the character of the mild patriot Brutus, loſes all temper and decorum; nay, ſo ridiculous is the behaviour of him and Caſſius at their interview, that ſetting foot to foot, and grinning at each other, with the aſpect of two coblers enraged, they thruſt their left ſides together, with repeated ſhocks, that the hilts of their ſwords may claſh for the entertainment of the audience; as if they were a couple of Merry-Andrews, endeavouring to raiſe the laugh of the vulgar, on ſome ſcaffold at Bartholomew-fair. The deſpair of a great man who falls a ſacrifice to the infernal practices of a ſubtle traitor, that enjoyed

his

his confidence, this English Æſopus repreſents, by beating his own forehead, and bellowing like a bull; and, indeed, in almoſt all his moſt intereſting ſcenes, performs ſuch ſtrange ſhakings of the head, and other antick geſticulations, that when I firſt ſaw him act, I imagined the poor man laboured under that paralitical diſorder, which is known by the name of St. Vitus's dance. In ſhort, he ſeemed to be a ſtranger to the more refined ſenſations of the ſoul, conſequently his expreſſion is of the vulgar kind, and he muſt often ſink under the idea of the poet; ſo that he has recourſe to ſuch violence of affected agitation, as impoſes upon the undiſcerning ſpectator, but to the eye of taſte, evinces him a mere player of that claſs whom your admired Shakſpear juſtly compares to nature's journeymen tearing a paſſion to rags. Yet this man, in ſpite of all theſe abſurdities, is an admirable Falſtaff, exhibits the character of the eighth Henry to the life, is reaſonably applauded in the Plain Dealer, excels in the part of Sir John Brute, and would be equal to many humorous ſituations in low comedy, which his pride will not allow him to undertake. I ſhould not have been ſo ſevere upon this actor, had I not ſeen him extolled by his partizans with the moſt ridiculous and fulſome manifeſtations of praiſe, even in thoſe very circumſtances wherein (as I have obſerved) he chiefly failed.'

Pickle, not a little piqued to hear the qualifications of ſuch a celebrated actor in England treated with ſuch freedom and diſreſpect, anſwered with ſome aſperity, that the chevalier was a true critick, more induſtrious in obſerving blemiſhes than in acknowledging the excellence of thoſe who fell under his examination.

It was not to be ſuppoſed, that one actor could ſhine equally in all characters; and though his obſervations were undoubtedly very judicious, he himſelf could not help wondering that ſome of them had always eſcaped his notice, though he had been an aſſiduous frequenter of the playhouſe. 'The player in queſtion,' ſaid he, 'has, in your own opinion, a conſiderable ſhare of merit

rit in the characters of comick life; and as to the manners of the great perſonages in tragedy, and the operation of the grand paſſions of the ſoul, I apprehend, they may be variouſly repreſented, according to the various complexion and cultivation of different men. A Spaniard, for example, though impelled by the ſame paſſion, will expreſs it very differently from a Frenchman; and what is looked upon as graceful vivacity and addreſs by the one, would be conſidered as impertinence and foppery by the other: nay, ſo oppoſite is your common deportment from that of ſome other nations, that one of your own countrymen, in the relation of his travels, obſerves, that the Perſians, even of this age, when they ſee any man perform unneceſſary geſtures, ſay he is either a fool or a Frenchman. The ſtandard of demeanour being thus unſettled, a Turk, a Moor, an Indian, or inhabitant of any country, whoſe cuſtoms and dreſs are widely different from ours, may, in his ſentiments, poſſeſs all the dignity of the human heart, and be inſpired by the nobleſt paſſion that animates the ſoul, and yet excite the laughter rather than the reſpect of an European ſpectator.

'When I firſt beheld your famous Pariſian ſtage-heroine, in one of her principal parts, her attitudes ſeemed ſo violent, and ſhe toſſed her arms around with ſuch extravagance, that ſhe put me in mind of a wind-mill under the agitation of a hard gale; while her voice and features exhibited the lively repreſentation of an Engliſh ſcold. The action of your favourite male performer was in my opinion equally unnatural; he appeared with the affected airs of a dancing-maſter; at the moſt pathetick junctures of his fate, he lifted up his hands above his head, like a tumbler going to vault, and ſpoke as if his throat had been obſtructed by an hair-bruſh; yet, when I compared their manners with thoſe of the people before whom they performed, and made allowance for that exaggeration which obtains on all theatres, I was inſenſibly reconciled to their method of performance,

performance, and I could diſtinguiſh abundance of merit beneath that oddity of appearance.'

The chevalier perceiving Peregrine a little irritated at what he had ſaid, aſked pardon for the liberty he had taken, in cenſuring the Engliſh players; aſſuring him that he had an infinite veneration for the Britiſh learning, genius, and taſte, which were ſo juſtly diſtinguiſhed in the world of letters; and that notwithſtanding the ſeverity of his criticiſm, he thought the theatre of London much better ſupplied with actors than that of Paris. The young gentleman thanked him for his polite condeſcenſion, at which Pallet exulted, ſaying, with a ſhake of the head, 'I believe ſo too, Monſieur!' and the phyſician, impatient of the diſpute in which he had borne no ſhare, obſerved, with a ſupercilious air, that the modern ſtage was altogether beneath the notice of one who had an idea of ancient magnificence and execution; that plays ought to be exhibited at the expence of the ſtate, as thoſe of Sophocles were by the Athenians; and that proper judges ſhould be appointed for receiving or rejecting all ſuch performances as are offered to the publick.

He then deſcribed the theatre at Rome, which contained eighty thouſand ſpectators; gave them a learned diſquiſition into the nature of the perſona, or maſk, worn by the Roman actors, which he ſaid was a machine that covered the whole head, furniſhed on the inſide with a brazen concavity, that by reverberating the ſound, as it iſſued from the mouth, raiſed the voice, ſo as to render it audible to ſuch an extended audience. He explained the difference between the ſaltator and declamator, one of whom acted, while the other rehearſed the part; and from thence took occaſion to mention the perfection of their pantomimes, who were ſo amazingly diſtinct in the exerciſe of their art, that a certain prince of Pontus being at the court of Nero, and ſeeing one of them repreſent a ſtory, begged him of the emperor, in order to employ him as an interpreter among barbarous nations, whoſe language he did not underſtand. Nay,

divers cynick philosophers, who had condemned this entertainment unseen, when they chanced to be eye-witnesses of their admirable dexterity, expressed their sorrow for having so long debarred themselves of such rational enjoyment. He dissented, however, from the opinion of Peregrine; who, as a proof of their excellence, had advanced, that some of the English actors fancied themselves the very thing they represented, and recounted a story from Lucian, of a certain celebrated pantomime, who, in acting the part of Ajax in his phrenzy, was transported into a real fit of delirium, during which he tore to pieces the cloaths of that actor who stalked before him, beating the stage with iron shoes, in order to increase the noise; snatched an instrument from one of the musicians, and broke it over the head of him who represented Ulysses; and running to the consular bench, mistook a couple of senators for the sheep which were to be slain. The audience applauded him to skies; but so conscious was the mimick of his own extravagance, when he recovered the use of his reason, that he actually fell sick with mortification; and being afterwards desired to re-act the piece, flatly refused to appear in any such character, saying, that the shortest follies were the best, and that it was sufficient for him to have been a madman once in his life.

CHAP. XVIII.

An Adventure happens to Pipes, in Consequence of which he is dismissed from Peregrine's Service. The whole Company set out for Ghent in the Diligence. Our Hero is captivated by a Lady in that Carriage; interests her spiritual Director in his Behalf.

THE doctor being fairly engaged on the subject of the ancients, would have proceeded the Lord knows how far, without hesitation, had not he been interrupted by the arrival of Mr. Jolter, who in great confusion told them, that Pipes having affronted a soldier, was then surrounded in the street, and would certainly

tainly be put to death, if ſome perſon of authority did not immediately interpoſe in his behalf.

Peregrine no ſooner learned the danger of his truſty ſquire, than ſnatching up his ſword, he ran down ſtairs, and was followed by the chevalier, intreating him to leave the affair to his management. Within ten yards of the door, they found Tom with his back to a wall, defending himſelf manfully with a mopſtick againſt the aſſault of three or four ſoldiers, who at ſight of the Malteſe croſs deſiſted from the attack, and were taken into cuſtody by order of the knight. One of the aggreſſors being an Iriſhman, begged to be heard with great importunity, before he ſhould be ſent to the guard; and by the mediation of Pickle, was accordingly brought into the hotel, with his companions, all three bearing upon their heads and faces evident marks of their adverſary's proweſs and dexterity. The ſpokeſman being confronted with Pipes, informed the company, that having by accident met with Mr. Pipes, whom he conſidered as his countryman, though fortune had diſpoſed of them in different ſervices, he invited him to drink a glaſs of wine; and accordingly carried him to a cabaret, where he introduced him to his comrades; but in the courſe of the converſation, which turned upon the power and greatneſs of the kings of France and England, Mr. Pipes had been pleaſed to treat his Moſt Chriſtian Majeſty with great diſreſpect; and when he (the entertainer) expoſtulated with him in a friendly manner about his impolite behaviour, obſerving, that he being in the French ſervice, would be under the neceſſity of reſenting his abuſe, if he did not put a ſtop to it before the other gentlemen of the cloth ſhould comprehend his meaning, he had ſet them all three at defiance, diſhonoured him in particular with the opprobrious epithet of *rebel to his native king and country*, and even drank (in broken French) to the perdition of Louis and all his adherents! that, compelled by this outrageous conduct, he, as the perſon who had recommended him to their ſociety, had, in vindication

of his own character, demanded satisfaction of the delinquent, who on pretence of fetching a sword, had gone to his lodging, from whence he all of a sudden sallied upon them with a mop-stick, which he employed in the annoyance of them all without distinction, so that they were obliged to draw in their own defence.

Pipes being questioned by his master, with regard to the truth of this account, owned that every circumstance of it was justly represented; saying, he did not value their cheese-toasters a pinch of oakum; and that if the gentleman had not shot in betwixt them, he would have trimmed them to such a tune, that they should not have had a whole yard to square. Peregrin reprimanded him sharply for his unmannerly behaviour, and insisted upon his asking pardon of those he had injured upon the spot. But no consideration was efficacious enough to produce such concession; to this command he was both deaf and dumb, and the repeated threats of his master had no more effect than if they had been addressed to a marble statue. At length our hero, incensed at his obstinacy, started up, and would have chastised him with manual operation, had not he been prevented by the chevalier, who found means to moderate his indignation so far, that he contented himself with dismissing the offender from his service; and after having obtained the discharge of the prisoners, gave them a Louis to drink, by way of recompence for the disgrace and damage they had sustained.

The knight perceiving our young gentleman very much ruffled at this accident, and reflecting upon the extraordinary deportment and appearance of his valet, whose hair had by this time adopted a grizzled hue, imagined he was some favourite domestick, who had grown grey in the service of his master's family, and that, of consequence, he was uneasy at the sacrifice he had made. Swayed by this conjecture, he earnestly solicited in his behalf; but all he could obtain, was a promise of re-admitting him into favour on the terms already proposed, or at least on condition that he should

make

make his acknowledgment to the chevalier, for his want of reverence and reſpect for the French monarch.

Upon this condeſcenſion, the culprit was called up ſtairs, and made acquainted with the mitigation of his fate; upon which he ſaid, he would down on his marrow-bones to his own maſter, but would be damn'd before he would aſk pardon of e'er a Frenchman in Chriſtendom. Pickle, exaſperated at this blunt declaration, ordered him out of his preſence, and charged him never to appear before his face again; while the officer in vain employed all his influence and addreſs to appeaſe his reſentment, and about midnight took his leave, with marks of mortification at his want of ſucceſs.

Next day the company agreed to travel through Flanders in the diligence, by the advice of Peregrine, who was not without hope of meeting with ſome adventure or amuſement in that carriage; and Jolter took care to ſecure places for them all. It being reſolved that the valet de chambre and the doctor's man ſhould attend the vehicle on horſeback; and as for the forlorn Pipes, he was left to reap the fruits of his own ſtubborn diſpoſition, notwithſtanding the united efforts of the whole triumvirate, who endeavoured to procure his pardon. Every previous meaſure being thus taken, they ſet out from Liſle about ſix in the morning, and found themſelves in the company of a female adventurer; a very handſome young lady, a capuchin, and a Rotterdam Jew. Our young gentleman being the firſt of this ſociety that entered, ſurveyed the ſtrangers with an attentive eye, and ſeated himſelf immediately behind the beautiful unknown, who at once attracted his attention. Pallet ſeeing another lady unengaged, in imitation of his friend, took poſſeſſion of her neighbourhood; the phyſician paired with the prieſt, and Jolter ſat down by the Jew.

The machine had not proceeded many furlongs, when Pickle, accoſting the fair incognita, congratulated himſelf upon his happineſs, in being the fellow-traveller of ſo charming a lady. She, without the leaſt re-

ſerve or affectation, thanked him for his compliment, and replied with a ſprightly air, that now they were embarked in one common bottom, they muſt club their endeavours to make one another as happy as the nature of their ſituation would permit them to be. Encouraged by this frank intimation, and captivated by her fine black eyes and eaſy behaviour, he attached himſelf to her from that moment; and in a little time the converſation became ſo particular, that the capuchin thought proper to interfere in the diſcourſe, in ſuch a manner as gave the youth to underſtand, that he was there on purpoſe to ſuperintend her conduct. He was doubly rejoiced at this diſcovery, in conſequence of which he hoped to profit in his addreſſes, not only by the young lady's reſtraint, that never fails to operate in behalf of the lover, but alſo by the corruptibility of her guardian, whom he did not doubt of rendering propitious to his cauſe. Fluſhed with theſe expectations, he behaved with uncommon complacency to the father, who was charmed with the affability of his carriage, and on the faith of his generoſity abated of his vigilance ſo much, that our hero carried on his ſuit without farther moleſtation; while the painter, in ſigns and loud burſts of laughter, converſed with his dulcinea, who was perfectly well verſed in theſe ſimple expreſſions of ſatisfaction, and had already found means to make a dangerous invaſion upon his heart.

Nor were the governor and phyſician unemployed, while their friends intereſted themſelves in this agreeable manner. Jolter no ſooner perceived the Hollander was a Jew, than he entered into an inveſtigation of the Hebrew tongue, in which he was a connoiſſeur; and the doctor at the ſame time attacked the mendicant on the ridiculous maxims of his order, together with the impoſitions of prieſtcraft in general, which (he obſerved) prevailed ſo much among thoſe who profeſs the Roman Catholick religion.

Thus coupled, each committee enjoyed their own converſation apart, without any danger of encroach-

ment;

ment; and all were ſo intent upon their ſeveral topicks, that they ſcarce allowed themſelves a ſmall interval in viewing the deſolation of Menin, as they paſſed through that ruined frontier. About twelve o'clock they arrived at Courtray, where the horſes are always changed, and the company halt an hour for refreſhment. Here Peregrine handed his charmer into an apartment, where ſhe was joined by the other lady; and on pretence of ſeeing ſome of the churches in town, put himſelf under the direction of the capuchin, from whom he learned that the young lady was wife to a French gentleman, to whom ſhe had been married about a year, and that ſhe was now on her journey to viſit her mother, who lived in Bruſſels, and who at that time laboured under a lingering diſtemper, which, in all probability, would ſoon put a period to her life. He then launched out in praiſe of her daughter's virtue and conjugal affection; and laſtly told him, that he was her father confeſſor, and pitched upon to be her conductor through Flanders, by her huſband, who, as well as his wife, placed the utmoſt confidence in his prudence and integrity.

Pickle eaſily comprehended the meaning of this inſinuation, and took the hint accordingly. He tickled the prieſt's vanity with extraordinary encomiums upon the diſintereſted principles of his order, which were detached from all worldly purſuits, and altogether devoted to the eternal ſalvation of mankind. He applauded their patience, humility, and learning, and laviſhed a world of praiſe upon their talent in preaching, which (he ſaid) had more than once operated ſo powerfully upon him, that had he not been reſtrained by certain conſiderations which he could not poſſibly wave, he ſhould have embraced their tenets, and begged admiſſion into their fraternity: But, as the circumſtances of his fate would not permit him to take ſuch a ſalutary meaſure for the preſent, he intreated the good father to accept a ſmall token of his love and reſpect, for the benefit of that convent to which he belonged. So ſaying, he

he pulled out a purſe of ten guineas, which the capuchin obſerving, turned his head another way, and lifting up his arm, diſplayed a pocket almoſt as high as his collar-bone, in which he depoſited the money.

This proof of affection for the order produced a ſudden and ſurprizing effect upon the friar. In the tranſport of his zeal he wrung the ſemi-convert's hand, ſhowered a thouſand benedictions upon his head, and exhorted him with the tears flowing from his eyes, to perfect the great work which the finger of God had begun in his heart; and as an inſtance of his concern for the welfare of his precious ſoul, the holy brother promiſed to recommend him ſtrenuouſly to the pious admonitions of the young woman under his care, who was a perfect ſaint upon earth, and endued with the peculiar gift of mollifying the hearts of obdurate ſinners. 'O father!' cried the hypocritical projector, who by this time perceived that his money was not thrown away, 'if I could be favoured but for one half hour with the private inſtruction of that inſpired devotee, my mind preſages, that I ſhould be a ſtrayed ſheep brought back into the fold, and that I ſhould find eaſy entrance at the gates of heaven! There is ſomething ſupernatural in her aſpect: I gaze upon her with the moſt pious fervor, and my whole ſoul is agitated with tumults of hope and deſpair!' Having pronounced this rhapſody with tranſport half natural and half affected, the prieſt aſſured him, that theſe were operations of the ſpirit, which muſt not be repreſſed; and comforted him with the hope of enjoying the bleſſed interview which he deſired; proteſting, that as far as his influence extended, his wiſh ſhould be that very evening indulged. The gracious pupil thanked him for his benevolent concern, which he ſwore ſhould not be ſquandered upon an ungrateful object; and the reſt of the company interrupting the converſation, they returned in a body to the inn, where they dined all together, and the ladies were perſuaded to be our hero's gueſts,

As the ſubjects on which they had been engaged before dinner were not exhauſted, each brace reſumed their former theme, when they were replaced in the diligence. The painter's miſtreſs finiſhed her conqueſt, by exerting her ſkill in the art of ogling, accompanied by frequent bewitching ſighs, and ſome tender French ſongs, that ſhe ſung with ſuch pathetick expreſſion, as quite melted the reſolution of Pallet, and utterly ſubdued his affection: and he, to convince her of the importance of her victory, gave a ſpecimen of his own talents, by entertaining her with that celebrated Engliſh ditty, the burden of which begins with, 'The pigs they lie with their arſes bare.'

CHAP. XIX.

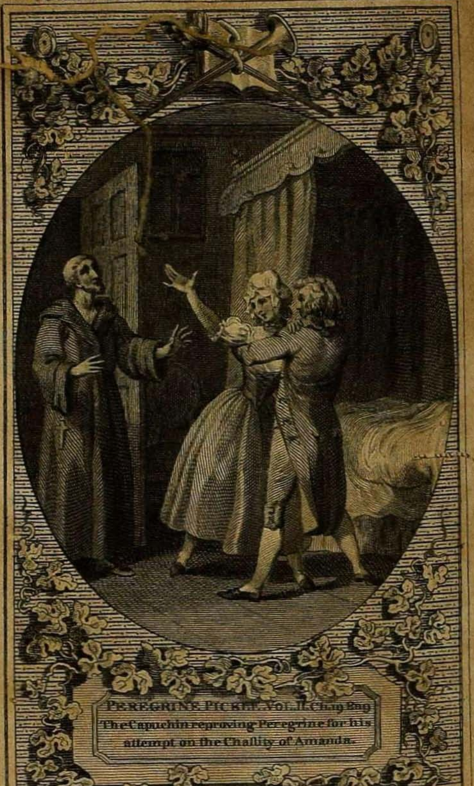
He makes ſome Progreſs in her Affections; is interrupted by a Diſpute between Jolter and the Jew; appeaſes the Wrath of the Capuchin, who procures for him an Interview with his fair Enſlaver, in which he finds himſelf deceived.

PEREGRINE, meanwhile, employed all his inſinuation and addreſs in practiſing upon the heart of the capuchin's fair charge. He had long ago declared his paſſion, not in the ſuperficial manner of a French gallant, but with all the ardour of an enthuſiaſt. He had languiſhed, vowed, flattered, kiſſed her hand by ſtealth, and had no reaſon to complain of his reception. Though by a man of leſs ſanguine diſpoſition, her particular complaiſance would have been deemed equivocal, and perhaps nothing more than the effect of French breeding and conſtitutional vivacity; he gave his own qualifications credit for the whole, and with theſe ſentiments carried on the attack with ſuch unabating vigour, that ſhe was actually prevailed upon to accept a ring, which he preſented as a token of his eſteem; and every thing proceeded in a moſt proſperous train, when they were diſturbed by the governor and Iſraelite, who in the heat of diſputation raiſed their voices, and poured forth ſuch effuſions of gutturals, as ſet our lover's teeth on edge. As they ſpoke in a language unknown to every one in the carriage but themſelves, and looked

at each other with mutual animosity and rancour, Peregrine desired to know the cause of their contention. Upon which, Jolter exclaimed in a furious tone, 'This learned Levite, forsooth, has the impudence to tell me that I don't understand Hebrew; and affirms, that the word *Benoni* signifies *child of joy*; whereas I can prove, and indeed have already said enough to convince any reasonable man, that in the Septuagint it is rightly translated into *son of my sorrow*.' Having thus explained himself to his pupil, he turned to the priest, with intention to appeal to his determination; but the Jew pulled him by the sleeve with great eagerness, saying, 'For the love of God be quiet, the capuchin will discover who we are!' Jolter, offended at this conjunction, echoed, 'Who we are!' with great emphasis; and repeating *nos poma natamus*, asked ironically, to which of the tribes the Jew thought he belonged. The Levite affronted at his comparing him to a ball of horse-dung, replied with a most significant grin, 'To the tribe of Issachar.' His antagonist, taking the advantage of his unwillingness to be known to the friar, and prompted by revenge for the freedom he had used, answered in the French language, that the judgment of God was still manifest upon their whole race, not only in their being in the state of exiles from their native land, but also in the spite of their hearts and pravity of their dispositions, which demonstrate them to be the genuine offspring of those who crucified the Saviour of the world.

His expectation was, however, defeated; the priest himself was too deeply engaged, to attend to the debates of other people. The physician, in the pride and insolence of his learning, had undertaken to display the absurdity of the Christian faith; having already (as he thought) confuted the capuchin, touching the points of belief in which the Roman Catholicks differ from the rest of the world. But not contented with the imagined victory he had gained, he began to strike at the fundamentals of religion; and the father, with incredible forbearance, suffered him to make very free with the

COOKE'S POCKET EDITION OF SELECT NOVELS.



PEREGRINE PICKLE. VOL. II. Chap 89.
The Capuchin reproving Peregrine for his attempt on the Chastity of Amanda.

R. Corbould, delin. ... ed for C. Cooke ... ter Row, Oct. 2. 1794. J. Saunders Sculp.

the doctrine of the Trinity; but, when he levelled the shafts of his ridicule at the immaculate conception of the Blessed Virgin, the good man's patience forsook him, his eyes seemed to kindle with indignation, he trembled in every joint, and uttered with a loud voice, 'Thou art an abominable—I will not call thee heretick, for thou art worse (if possible) than a Jew; you deserve to be inclosed in a furnace seven times heated, and I have a good mind to lodge an information against you with the governor of Ghent, that you may be apprehended and punished as an impious blasphemer.'

This menace operated like a charm upon all present. The doctor was confounded; the governor dismayed; the Levite's teeth chattered; the painter was astonished at the general confusion, the cause of which he could not comprehend; and Pickle himself, not a little alarmed, was obliged to use all his interest and assiduity in appeasing this son of the church; who, at length, in consideration of the friendship he professed for the young gentleman, consented to forgive what had passed, but absolutely refused to sit in contact with such a profane wretch, whom he looked upon as a fiend of darkness, sent by the enemy of mankind to poison the minds of weak people; so that, after having crossed himself, and muttered certain exorcisms, he insisted upon the doctor's changing places with the Jew, who approached the offended ecclesiastick in an agony of fear.

Matters being thus compromised, the conversation flowed in a more general channel; and without the intervention of any other accident, or bone of contention, the carriage arrived at the city of Ghent about seven in the evening. Supper being bespoke for the whole company, our adventurer and his friends went out to take a superficial view of the place, leaving his new mistress to the pious exhortations of her confessor, whom (as we have already observed) he had secured in his interest. This zealous mediator spoke so warmly in his commendation, and interested her conscience so much in the affair, that she could not refuse her helping hand to

the

the great work of his converſion, and promiſed to grant the interview he deſired.

This agreeable piece of intelligence, which the capuchin communicated to Peregrine at his return, elevated his ſpirits to ſuch a degree, that he ſhone at ſupper with uncommon brilliance, in a thouſand ſallies of wit and pleaſantry, to the admiration and delight of all preſent, eſpecially of his fair Fleming, who ſeemed quite captivated by his perſon and behaviour.

The evening being thus ſpent to the ſatisfaction of all parties, the company broke up, and retired to their ſeveral apartments, when our lover, to his unſpeakable mortification, learned that the two ladies were obliged to lie in the ſame room, all the other chambers of the inn being pre-occupied. When he imparted this difficulty to the prieſt, that charitable father, who was very fruitful in expedients, aſſured him, that his ſpiritual concerns ſhould not be obſtructed by ſuch a ſlender impediment; and accordingly availed himſelf of his prerogative, by going into his daughter's chamber when ſhe was almoſt undreſſed, and leading her into his own, on pretence of adminiſtering ſalutary food for her ſoul. Having brought the two votaries together, he prayed for ſucceſs to the operations of grace, and left them to their mutual meditations, after having conjured them in the moſt ſolemn manner to let no impure ſentiments or temptations of the fleſh, interfere with the hallowed deſign of their meeting.

The reverend interceſſor being gone, and the door faſtened on the inſide, the pſeudo-convert, tranſported with his paſſion, threw himſelf at his Amanda's feet; and begging ſhe would ſpare him the tedious form of addreſſes, which the nature of their interview would not permit him to obſerve, began with all the impetuoſity of love to make the moſt by the occaſion. But whether ſhe was diſpleaſed by the intrepidity and aſſurance of his behaviour, thinking herſelf intitled to more courtſhip and reſpect, or was really better fortified with chaſtity than he or his procurer had ſuppoſed her to be,

certain

rtain it is, ſhe expreſſed reſentment and ſurpriſe at
is boldneſs and preſumption, and upbraided him with
aving impoſed upon the charity of the friar. The
oung gentleman was really as much aſtoniſhed at this
ebuff, as ſhe pretended to be at his declaration, and
arneſtly entreated her to conſider how precious the
oments were, and for once ſacrifice ſuperfluous cere-
ony, to the happineſs of one who adored her with
ch a flame, as could not fail to conſume his vitals, if
he would not deign to bleſs him with her favour.
Notwithſtanding all his tears, vows, and ſupplications,
his perſonal accompliſhments, and the tempting oppor-
tunity, all that he could obtain, was an acknowledg-
ment of his having made an impreſſion upon her heart,
which ſhe hoped the dictates of her duty would enable
her to eraſe. This confeſſion he conſidered as a deli-
cate conſent; and obeying the impulſe of his love,
ſnatched her up in his arms, with an intention of ſeiz-
ing that which ſhe declined to give; when this French
Lucretia, unable to defend her virtue any other way,
ſcreamed aloud; and the capuchin, ſetting his ſhoulder
to the door, forced it open, and entered in an affected
extaſy of amazement. He lifted up his hands and
eyes, and pretended to be thunderſtruck at the diſco-
very he had made; then, in broken exclamations, pro-
feſſed his horror at the wicked intention of our hero,
who had covered ſuch a damnable ſcheme with the
maſk of religion.

In ſhort, he performed his cue with ſuch dexterity,
that the lady believing him in earneſt, begged he
would forgive the ſtranger, on account of his youth
and education, which had been tainted by errors of
hereſy; and he was on theſe conſiderations content to
accept the ſubmiſſion of our hero, who, far from re-
nouncing his expectations, notwithſtanding this morti-
fying repulſe, confided ſo much in his own talents, and
the confeſſion which his miſtreſs had made, that he re-
ſolved to make another effort, to which nothing could
have

have prompted him but the utmost turbulence of unruly desire.

CHAP. XX.

He makes another Effort towards the Accomplishment of his Wish, which is postponed by a strange Accident.

HE directed his valet de chambre, who was a thorough-paced pimp, to kindle some straw in the yard, and then pass by the door of her apartment, crying with a loud voice, that the house was on fire. This alarm brought both ladies out of their chambers in a moment, and Peregrine taking the advantage of their running to the street-door, entered the room and concealed himself under a large table that stood in an unobserved corner. The nymphs, as soon as they understood the cause of his Mercury's supposed affright, returned to their apartment, and having said their prayers, undressed themselves and went to bed. This scene, which fell under the observation of Pickle, did not at all contribute to the cooling of his concupiscence, but on the contrary inflamed him to such a degree, that he could scarce restrain his impatience, until by her breathing deep, he concluded the fellow-lodger of his Amanda was asleep. This welcome note no sooner saluted his ears, than he crept to his charmer's bed-side, and placing himself on his knees, gently laid hold on her white hand, and pressed it to his lips. She had just begun to close her eyes, and enjoy the agreeable oppression of slumber, when she was rouzed by this rape, at which she started, pronouncing, in a tone of surprize and dismay, 'My God! who's that?' The lover, with the most insinuating humility, besought her to hear him; vowing that his intention in approaching her thus, was not to violate the laws of decency, or that indelible esteem which she had engraven on his heart, but to manifest his sorrow and contrition for the umbrage he had given, to pour forth the overflowings of his soul, and tell her that he neither could or would survive her displeasure. These and many more pathetick protestations, accompanied with sighs and tears, and other expressions

preſſions of grief, which our hero had at command, could not fail to melt the tender heart of the amiable Fleming, already prepoſſeſſed in favour of his qualifications. She ſympathized ſo much with his affliction, as to weep in her turn, when ſhe repreſented the impoſſibility of her rewarding his paſſion; and he, ſeizing the favourable moment, reinforced his ſolicitations with ſuch irreſiſtible tranſports, that her reſolution gave way, ſhe began to breathe quick, expreſſed her fear of being overheard by the other lady, and with an ejaculation of, 'O Heavens! I'm undone!' ſuffered him, after a faint ſtruggle, to make a lodgment upon the covered way of her bed. Her honour, however, was ſecured for the preſent, by a ſtrange ſort of knocking upon the wainſcot, at the other end of the room, hard by the bed in which the female adventurer lay.

Surprized at this circumſtance, the lady begged him for heaven's ſake to retreat, or her reputation would be ruined for ever: but when he repreſented to her, that her character would run a much greater riſk, if he ſhould be detected in withdrawing, ſhe conſented with great trepidation to his ſtay, and they liſtened in ſilence to the ſequel of the noiſe that alarmed them. This was no other than an expedient of the painter, to awaken his dulcinea, with whom he had made an aſſignation, or at leaſt interchanged ſuch ſignals as he thought amounted to a firm appointment. His nymph being diſturbed in her firſt ſleep, immediately underſtood the ſound, and true to the agreement, roſe, and unbolting the door as ſoftly as poſſible, gave him admittance, leaving it open for his more commodious retreat.

While this happy gallant was employed in diſengaging himſelf from the diſhabille in which he had entered, the capuchin ſuſpecting that Peregrine would make another attempt upon his charge, had crept ſilently to the apartment, in order to reconnoitre, leſt the adventure ſhould be atchieved without his knowledge; a circumſtance that would deprive him of the profits he might expect from his privity and concurrence. Find-

ing the door unlatched, his ſuſpicion was confirmed, and he made no ſcruple of creeping into the chamber on all fours; ſo that the painter having ſtripped himſelf to the ſhirt, in groping about for his dulcinea's bed, chanced to lay his hand upon the ſhaven crown of the father's head, which, by a circular motion, the prieſt began to turn round in his graſp, like a ball in a ſocket, to the ſurprize and conſternation of poor Pallet, who having neither penetration to comprehend the cauſe, nor reſolution to withdraw his fingers from this ſtrange object of his touch, ſtood ſweating in the dark, and venting ejaculations with great devotion. The friar tired with this exerciſe, and the painful poſture in which he ſtooped, raiſed himſelf gradually upon his feet, heaving up at the ſame time the hand of the painter, whoſe terror and amazement increaſed to ſuch a degree at this unaccountable elevation, that his faculties began to fail; and his palm in the confuſion of his fright ſliding over the prieſt's forehead, one of his fingers happened to ſlip into his mouth, and was immediately ſecured between the capuchin's teeth, with as firm a fixture as if it had been ſcrewed in a blackſmith's vice. The painter was ſo much diſordered by this ſudden ſnap, which tortured him to the bone, that forgetting all other conſiderations, he roared aloud, 'Murder! a fire! a trap, a trap! help, Chriſtians! for the love of God, help!' Our hero, confounded by theſe exclamations, which he knew would ſoon fill the room with ſpectators, and incenſed at his own mortifying diſappointment, was obliged to quit the untaſted banquet; and approaching the cauſe of his misfortune, juſt as his tormentor had thought proper to releaſe his finger, diſcharged ſuch a hearty ſlap between his ſhoulders, as brought him to the ground with hideous bellowing; then retiring unperceived, to his own chamber, was one of the firſt who returned with a light, on pretence of having been alarmed with his cries. The capuchin had taken the ſame precaution, and followed Peregrine into the room, pronouncing *Benedicite*, and croſſing himſelf

himſelf with many marks of aſtoniſhment. The phyſician and Jolter appearing at the ſame time, the unfortunate painter was found lying naked on the floor, in all the agony of horror and diſmay, blowing upon his left-hand, that hung dangling from the elbow. The circumſtance of his being found in that apartment, and the attitude of his affliction, which was extremely ridiculous, provoked the doctor to a ſmile, and produced a ſmall relaxation in the ſeverity of the governor's countenance; while Pickle, teſtifying ſurprize and concern, lifted him from the ground, and enquired into the cauſe of his preſent ſituation. Having, after ſome recollection, and fruitleſs endeavours to ſpeak, recovered the uſe of his tongue, he told them, that the houſe was certainly haunted by evil ſpirits, by which he had been conveyed (he knew not how) into that apartment, and afflicted with all the tortures of hell: that one of them had made itſelf ſenſible of his feeling, in the ſhape of a round ball of ſmooth fleſh, which turned round under his hand, like an aſtronomer's globe, and then riſing up to a ſurprizing height, was converted into a machine that laid hold on his finger, by a ſnap, and having pinned him to the ſpot, he continued for ſome moments in unſpeakable agony. At laſt he ſaid the engine ſeemed to melt away from his finger, and he received a ſudden thwack upon his ſhoulders, as if diſcharged by the hand of a giant, which overthrew him in an inſtant upon the floor. The prieſt hearing this ſtrange account, pulled out of one of his pouches a piece of conſecrated candle, which he lighted immediately, and muttered certain myſterious conjurations. Jolter, imagining that Pallet was drunk, ſhook his head, ſaying, he believed the ſpirit was no where but in his own brain. The phyſician for once condeſcended to be a wag, and looking towards one of the beds, obſerved, that, in his opinion, the painter had been miſled by the fleſh, and not by the ſpirit. The fair Fleming lay in ſilent aſtoniſhment and affright; and her fellow-lodger, in order to acquit herſelf of all ſuſpi-

cion, exclaimed with incredible volubility against the author of this uproar, who (she did not doubt) had concealed himself in the apartment with a view of perpetrating some wicked attempt upon her precious virtue, and was punished and prevented by the immediate interposition of Heaven. At her desire, therefore, and at the earnest solicitation of the other lady, he was conducted to his own bed, and the chamber being evacuated, they locked their door, fully resolved to admit no more visitants for that night: while Peregrine, mad with seeing the delicious morsel snatched (as it were) from his very lips, stalked through the passage, like a ghost, in hope of finding some opportunity of re-entering, till the day beginning to break, he was obliged to retire, cursing the idiotical conduct of the painter, which had so unluckily interfered with his delight.

CHAP. XXI.

They depart from Ghent. Our Hero engages in a political Dispute with his Mistress, whom he offends, and pacifies with Submission. He practises an Expedient to detain the Carriage at Alost, and confirms the Priest in his Interest.

NEXT day, about one o'clock, after having seen every thing remarkable in town, and been present at the execution of two youths, who were hanged for ravishing a whore, they took their departure from Ghent, in the same carriage which had brought them thither; and the conversation turning upon the punishment they had seen inflicted, the Flemish beauty expressed great sympathy and compassion for the unhappy sufferers, who (as she had been informed) had fallen victims to the malice of the accuser. Her sentiments were espoused by all the company, except the French lady of pleasure; who, thinking the credit of the sisterhood concerned in the affair, bitterly inveighed against the profligacy of the age, and particularly the base and villainous attempts of man upon the chastity of the weaker sex; saying, with a look of indignation directed to the painter, that for her own part, she should never be able to

manifest

manifeſt the acknowledgment ſhe owed to Providence, for having protected her laſt night from the wicked aims of unbridled luſt. This obſervation introduced a ſeries of jokes, at the expence of Pallet, who hung his ears, and ſat with a ſilent air of dejection, fearing that through the malevolence of the phyſician, his adventure might reach the ears of his wife. Indeed, though we have made ſhift to explain the whole tranſaction to the reader, it was an inextricable myſtery to every individual in the diligence; becauſe the part which was acted by the capuchin was known to himſelf alone; and even he was utterly ignorant of Pickle's being concerned in the affair; ſo that the greateſt ſhare of the painter's ſufferings were ſuppoſed to be the exaggerations of his own extravagant imagination.

In the midſt of their diſcourſe on this extraordinary ſubject, the driver told them, that they were now on the very ſpot where a detachment of the allied army had been intercepted and cut off by the French; and ſtopping the vehicle, entertained them with a local deſcription of the battle of Melle. Upon this occaſion, the Flemiſh lady, who, ſince her marriage, had become a keen partizan for the French, gave a minute detail of all the circumſtances, as they had been repreſented to her by her huſband's brother, who was in the action. This account, which ſunk the number of the French to ſixteen, and raiſed that of the allies to twenty thouſand men, was ſo diſagreeable to truth, as well as to the laudable partiality of Peregrine, that he ventured to contradict her aſſertions; and a fierce diſpute commenced, that not only regarded the preſent queſtion, but alſo comprehended all the battles in which the Duke of Marlborough had commanded againſt Louis the Fourteenth. In the courſe of theſe debates, ſhe diveſted the great general of all the glory he had acquired, by affirming, that every victory he gained was purpoſely loſt by the French generals, in order to bring the ſchemes of Madame de Maintenon into diſcredit; and as a particular inſtance, alledged that while the

citadel

citadel of Liſle was beſieged, Louis ſaid, in preſence of the dauphin, that if the allies ſhould be obliged to raiſe the ſiege, he would immediately declare his marriage with that lady; upon which, the ſon ſent private orders to Marſhal Boufflers to ſurrender the place. This ſtrange allegation was ſupported by the aſſeverations of the prieſt and the courtezan, and admitted as truth by the governor, who pretended to have heard it from good authority: while the doctor ſat neutral, as one who thought it ſcandalous to know the hiſtory of ſuch modern events. The Iſraelite, being a true Dutchman, liſted himſelf under the banners of our hero; who, in attempting to demonſtrate the abſurdity and improbability of what they had advanced, raiſed ſuch a hue and cry againſt himſelf, and being inſenſibly heated in the altercation, irritated his Amanda to ſuch a degree, that her charming eyes kindled with fury, and he ſaw great reaſon to think, that if he did not fall upon ſome method to deprecate her wrath, ſhe would in a twinkling ſacrifice all her eſteem for him, to her own zeal for the glory of the French nation. Moved by this apprehenſion, his ardour cooled by degrees, and he inſenſibly detached himſelf from the argument, leaving the whole care of ſupporting it to the Jew; who, finding himſelf deſerted, was fain to yield with diſcretion; ſo that the French remained maſters of the field, and their young heroine reſumed her good humour.

Our hero having prudently ſubmitted to the ſuperior intelligence to his fair enſlaver, began to be harraſſed with the fears of loſing her for ever, and ſet his invention at work, to contrive ſome means of indemnifying himſelf for his aſſiduities, preſents, and the diſappointment he had already undergone. On pretence of enjoying a freer air, he mounted the box, and employed his elocution and generoſity with ſuch ſucceſs, that the driver undertook to diſable the diligence from proceeding beyond the town of Aloſt for that day; and in conſequence of his promiſe, gently overturned it when

they

they were but a mile ſhort of that baiting place. He had taken his meaſures ſo diſcreetly, that this accident was attended with no other inconvenience than a fit of fear that took poſſeſſion of the ladies, and the neceſſity to which they were reduced by the declaration of the coachman, who, upon examining the carriage, aſſured the company that the axle-tree had given way, and adviſed them to walk forward to the inn, while he would jog after them at a ſlow pace, and do his endeavour the damage ſhould be immediately repaired. Peregrine pretended to be very much concerned at what had happened, and even curſed the driver for his inadvertency, expreſſing infinite impatience to be at Bruſſels, and wiſhing that this misfortune might not detain them another night upon the road; but when his underſtrapper, according to his inſtructions, came afterwards to the inn, and gave them to underſtand that the workman he had employed could not poſſibly refit the machine in leſs than ſix hours, the crafty youth affected to loſe all temper, ſtormed at his emiſſary, whom he reviled in the moſt opprobrious terms, and threatened to cane him for his miſconduct. The fellow proteſted, with great humility, that their being overturned was owing to the failure of the axle-tree, and not to his want of care or dexterity in driving; though rather than be thought the cauſe of incommoding him, he would enquire for a poſt-chaiſe, in which he might depart for Bruſſels immediately. This expedient Pickle rejected, unleſs the whole company could be accommodated in the ſame manner; and he had been previouſly informed by the driver, that the town could not furniſh more than one vehicle of that ſort. His governor, who was quite ignorant of his ſcheme, repreſented that one night would ſoon be paſſed; and exhorted him to bear this ſmall diſappointment with a good grace, eſpecially as the houſe ſeemed to be well provided for their entertainment, and the company ſo much diſpoſed to be ſociable. The capuchin, who had found his account in cultivating the acquaintance of the

the young ſtranger, was not ill-pleaſed at this event, which might, by protracting the term of their intercourſe, yield him ſome opportunity of profiting ſtill farther by his liberality: he therefore joined Mr. Jolter in his admonitions, congratulating himſelf upon the proſpect of enjoying his converſation a little longer than he had expected. Our young gentleman received a compliment to the ſame purpoſe from the Hebrew, who had that day exerciſed his gallantry upon the French coquette, and was not without hope of reaping the fruits of his attention; his rival, the painter, being quite diſgraced and dejected by the adventure of laſt night. As for the doctor, he was too much ingroſſed in the contemplation of his own importance, to intereſt himſelf in the affair, or its conſequences, farther than by obſerving, that the European powers ought to eſtabliſh publick games, like thoſe that were celebrated of old in Greece; in which caſe, every ſtate would be ſupplied with ſuch dextrous charioteers, as would drive a machine at full ſpeed, within a hair's breadth of a precipice, without any danger of its being overthrown. Peregrine could not help yielding to their remonſtrances, and united complaiſance, for which he thanked them in very polite terms; and his paſſion ſeeming to ſubſide, propoſed they ſhould amuſe themſelves in walking round the ramparts. He hoped to enjoy ſome private converſation with his admired Fleming, who had this whole day behaved with remarkable reſerve. The propoſal being embraced, he (as uſual) handed her into the ſtreet, and took all opportunities of promoting his ſuit; but they were attended ſo cloſely by her father confeſſor, that he foreſaw it would be impracticable to accompliſh his aim, without the connivance of that eccleſiaſtick. This he was obliged to purchaſe with another purſe, which he offered, and was accepted as a charitable atonement for his criminal behaviour during the interview which the friar had procured for the good of his ſoul. The benefaction was no ſooner made, than the pious mendicant edged off by little and

little,

little, till he joined the reſt of the company, leaving his generous patron at full liberty to proſecute his purpoſe. It is not to be doubted that our adventurer made a good uſe of this occaſion: he practiſed a thouſand flowers of rhetorick, and actually exhauſted his whole addreſs, in perſuading her to have compaſſion upon his miſery, and indulge him with another private audience, without which he ſhould run diſtracted, and be guilty of extravagances, which, in the humanity of her diſpoſition, ſhe would weep to ſee. But, inſtead of complying with his requeſt, ſhe chid him ſeverely for his preſumption, in perſecuting her with his vicious addreſſes. She aſſured him, that although ſhe had ſecured a chamber for herſelf in this place, becauſe ſhe had no ambition to be better acquainted with the other lady, he would be in the wrong to diſturb her with another nocturnal viſit; for ſhe was determined to deny him admittance. The lover was comforted by this hint, which he underſtood in the true acceptation; and his paſſion being inflamed by the obſtacles he had met with, his heart beat high with the proſpect of poſſeſſion. Theſe raptures of expectation produced an inquietude, which diſabled him from bearing that ſhare of the converſation for which he uſed to be diſtinguiſhed. His behaviour at ſupper was a viciſſitude of ſtarting and reveries. The capuchin, imputing this diſorder to a ſecond repulſe from his charge, began to be invaded with the apprehenſion of being obliged to refund, and in a whiſper forbade our hero to deſpair.

CHAP. XXII.

The French Coquette entraps the Heart of the Jew, againſt whom Pallet enters into a Conſpiracy; by which Peregrine is again diſappointed, and the Hebrew's Incontinence expoſed.

MEANWHILE, the French ſyren, baulked in her deſign upon her Engliſh cully, who was ſo eaſily diſheartened, and hung his ears in manifeſt deſpondence, rather than run the riſk of making a voyage that ſhould be altogether unprofitable, reſolved to practiſe her charms

charms upon the Dutch merchant. She had already made ſuch innovation upon his heart, that he cultivated her with peculiar complacency, gazed upon her with a moſt libidinous ſtare, and unbended his aſpect into a grin that was truly Iſraelitiſh. The painter ſaw, and was offended at this correſpondence, which he conſidered as an inſult upon his misfortune, as well as an evident preference of his rival; and conſcious of his own timidity, ſwallowed an extraordinary glaſs, that his invention might be ſtimulated, and his reſolution raiſed to the contrivance and execution of ſome ſcheme of revenge. The wine, however, failed in the expected effect, and without inſpiring him with the plan, ſerved only to quicken his deſire of vengeance; ſo that he communicated his purpoſe to his friend Peregrine, and begged his aſſiſtance; but our young gentleman was too intent upon his own affair, to mind the concerns of any other perſon; and he declining to be engaged in the project, Pallet had recourſe to the genius of Pickle's valet de chambre, who readily embarked in the undertaking, and invented a plan, which was executed accordingly.

The evening being pretty far advanced, and the company ſeparated into their reſpective apartments, Pickle repaired, in all the impatience of youth and deſire, to the chamber of his charmer, and finding the door unbolted, entered in a tranſport of joy. By the light of the moon, which ſhone through the window, he was conducted to her bed, which he approached in the utmoſt agitation; and perceiving her to all appearance aſleep, eſſayed to wake her with a gentle kiſs; but this method proved ineffectual, becauſe ſhe was determined to ſave herſelf the confuſion of being an accomplice in his guilt. He repeated the application, murmured a moſt paſſionate ſalutation in her ear, and took ſuch other gentle methods of ſignifying his preſence, as perſuaded him that ſhe was reſolved to ſleep, in ſpite of all his endeavours. Fluſhed with this agreeable ſuppoſition, he locked the door, in order to prevent interruption,

ruption, and ftealing himfelf under the cloaths, fet fortune at defiance, while he held the fair creature circled in his arms.

Neverthelefs, near as he feemed to be to the happy accomplifhment of his defire, his hope was again fruftrated with a fearful noife, which in a moment awaked his Amanda in a fright, and for the prefent engaged all his attention. His valet de chambre, whom Pallet had confulted as a confederate in his revenge againft the lady of pleafure and her Jewifh gallant, had hired of certain Bohemians, who chanced to lodge at the inn, a jack-afs adorned with bells, which, when every body was retired to reft, and the Hebrew fuppofed to be bedded with his miftrefs, they led up ftairs into a long thoroughfare, from which the chambers were detached on each fide. The painter, perceiving the lady's door a-jar, according to his expectation, mounted this animal, with intention to ride into the room, and difturb the lovers in the midft of their mutual endearments; but the afs, true to its kind, finding himfelf beftrid by an unknown rider, inftead of advancing in obedience to his conductor, retreated backward to the other end of the paffage, in fpite of all the efforts of the painter, who fpurred and kicked, and pummelled to no purpofe. It was the noife of this contention between Pallet and the afs, which invaded the ears of Peregrine and his miftrefs, neither of whom could form the leaft rational conjecture about the caufe of fuch ftrange difturbance, which increafed as the animal approached their apartment. At length, the bourique's retrograde motion was obftructed by the door, which it forced open in a twinkling, with one kick, and entered with fuch complication of found, as terrified the lady almoft into a fit, and threw her lover into the utmoft perplexity and confufion. The painter, finding himfelf thus violently intruded into the bed-chamber of he knew not whom, and dreading the refentment of the poffeffor, who might difcharge a piftol at him as a robber who had broke into his apartment, was overwhelmed with conftерna-

 tion,

tion, and redoubled his exertion to accomplish a speedy retreat, sweating all the time with fear, and putting up petitions to Heaven for his safety; but his obstinate companion, regardless of his situation, instead of submitting to his conduct, began to turn round like a millstone, the united sound of his feet and bells producing a most suprizing concert. The unfortunate rider, whirling about in this manner, would have quitted his seat, and left the beast to his own amusement, but the rotation was so rapid, that the terror of a severe fall hindered him from attempting to dismount, and in the desperation of his heart, he seized one of its ears, which he pinched so unmercifully, that the creature set up his throat, and brayed aloud. This hideous exclamation was no sooner heard by the fair Fleming, already chilled with panick, and prepared with superstition, than believing herself visited by the devil, who was permitted to punish her for her infidelity to the marriage-bed, she uttered a scream, and began to repeat her paternoster with a loud voice. Her lover, finding himself under the necessity of retiring, started up, and stung with the most violent pangs of rage and disappointment, ran directly to the spot from whence this diabolical noise seemed to proceed. There encountering the ass, he discharged such a volley of blows at him and his rider, that the creature carried him off at a round trot, and they roared in unison all the way. Having thus cleared the room of such disagreeable company, he went back to his mistress, and assuring her, that this was only some foolish prank of Pallet, took his leave, with a promise of returning after the quiet of the inn should be established.

In the mean time the noise of the bourique, the cries of the painter, and the lady's scream, had alarmed the whole house; and the ass, in the precipitation of his retreat, seeing people with lights before him, took shelter in the apartment for which he was at first designed, just as the Levite, arouzed at the uproar, had quitted his dulcinea, and was attempting to recover his own chamber unperceived,

COOKE'S EDITION OF SELECT NOVELS.
PEREGRINE PICKLE.
Amanda terrified at the
noise of the Ass upon which
Pallet entered her chamber.

unperceived. Seeing himſelf oppoſed by ſuch an animal, mounted by a tall, meagre, lanthorn-jawed figure, half-naked, with a white night-cap upon his head, which added to the natural paleneſs of his complexion, the Jew was ſorely troubled in mind, and believing it to be an apparition of Balaam and his aſs, fled backward with a nimble pace, and crept under the bed, where he lay concealed. Mr. Jolter, and the prieſt, who were the foremoſt of thoſe who had been arouzed by the noiſe, were not unmoved when they ſaw ſuch a ſpectacle ruſhing into his chamber, from whence the lady of pleaſure began to ſhriek. The governor made a full halt, and the capuchin diſcovered no inclination to proceed. They were, however, by the preſſure of the crowd that followed them, thruſt forward to the door, through which the viſion entered; and there Jolter, with great ceremony, complimented his reverence with the *pas*, beſeeching him to walk in. The mendicant was too courteous and humble to accept this pre-eminence, and a very earneſt diſpute enſued; during which the aſs, in the courſe of his circuit, ſhewed himſelf and rider, and in a trice decided the conteſt; for, ſtruck with this ſecond glimpſe, both, at one inſtant ſprung backward with ſuch force, as overturned the next men, who communicated the impulſe to thoſe that ſtood behind them, and theſe again to others; ſo that the whole paſſage was ſtrewed with a long file of people, that lay in a line, like the ſequel and dependance of a pack of cards. In the midſt of this havock, our hero returned from his own room with an air of aſtoniſhment, aſking the cauſe of this uproar. Receiving ſuch hints of intelligence as Jolter's conſternation would permit him to give, he ſnatched the candle out of his hand, and advanced into the haunted chamber without heſitation, being following by all preſent, who broke forth into a long and loud peal of laughter, when they perceived the ludicrous ſource of their diſquiet. The painter himſelf made an effort to join their mirth, but he had been ſo harrowed by fear, and ſmarted ſo much with

the pain of the discipline he had received from Pickle, that he could not, with all his endeavour, vanquish the ruefulness of his countenance. His attempt served only to increase the aukwardness of his situation, which was not at all mended by the behaviour of the coquette, who, furious with her disappointment, slipped on a petticoat and bed-gown, and springing upon him like another Hecuba, with her nails, deprived all one side of his nose of the skin, and would not have left him an eye to see through, if some of the company had not rescued him from her unmerciful talons. Provoked at this outrage, as well as by her behaviour to him in the diligence, he publickly explained his intention in entering her chamber in this equipage; and missing the Hebrew among the spectators, assured them that he must have absconded somewhere in the apartment. In pursuance of this intimation, the room was immediately searched, and the mortified Levite pulled by the heels from his lurking-place; so that Pallet had the good fortune, at last, to transfer the laugh from himself to his rival and the French inamorata, who accordingly underwent the ridicule of the whole audience.

CHAP. XXIII.

Pallet endeavouring to unravel the Mystery of the Treatment he had received, falls out of the Frying-pan into the Fire.

NEVERTHELESS, Pallet was still confounded, and chagrined by one consideration, which was no other than that of his having been so roughly handled in the chamber belonging (as he found upon enquiry) to the handsome young lady, who was under the capuchin's direction. He recollected, that the door was fast locked, when his beast burst it open; and he had no reason to believe that any person followed him in his irruption; on the other hand, he could not imagine, that such a gentle creature would either attempt to commit, or be able to execute such a desperate assault as that which his body had sustained; and her demeanor was

so modest and circumspect, that he durst not harbour the least suspicion of her virtue.

These reflections bewildered him in the labyrinth of thought: he rummaged his whole imagination, endeavouring to account for what had happened. At length he concluded, that either Peregrine, or the devil, or both, must have been at the bottom of the whole affair, and determined, for the satisfaction of his curiosity, to watch our hero's motions, during the remaining part of the night, so narrowly that his conduct, mysterious as it was, should not be able to elude his penetration.

With these sentiments he retired to his own room, after the ass had been restored to the right owners, and the priest had visited and confirmed his fair ward, who had been almost distracted with fear. Silence no sooner prevailed again, than he crawled darkling towards her door, and huddled himself up in an obscure corner, from whence he might observe the ingress or egress of any human creature. He had not long remained in this posture, when, fatigued with this adventure, and that of the preceding night, his faculties were gradually overpowered with slumber; and falling fast asleep, he began to snore like a whole congregation of presbyterians. The Flemish beauty, hearing this discordant noise in the passage, began to be afraid of some new alarm, and very prudently bolted the door: so that when her lover wanted to repeat his visit, he was not only surprized and incensed at this disagreeable serenade, the author of which he did not know; but when compelled by his passion, which was by this time wound to the highest pitch, he ventured to approach the entrance, he had the extreme mortification to find himself shut out. He durst not knock or signify his presence in any other manner, on account of the lady's reputation, which would have greatly suffered, had the snorer been waked by his endeavours. Had he known that the person who thus thwarted his views was the painter, he would have taken some effectual step to remove him; but he could not conceive what should induce Pallet to take

up his residence in that corner; nor could he use the assistance of a light, to distinguish him, because there was not a candle burning in the house.

It is impossible to describe the rage and vexation of our hero, while he continued thus tantalized upon the brink of bliss, after his desire had been exasperated by the circumstances of his two former disappointments. He ejaculated a thousand execrations against his own fortune; cursed all his fellow-travellers without exception; vowed revenge against the painter, who had twice confounded his most interesting scheme; and was tempted to execute immediate vengeance upon the unknown cause of his present miscarriage. In this agony of distraction did he sweat two whole hours in the passage, though not without some faint hope of being delivered from his tormentor, who (he imagined) upon waking, would undoubtedly shift his quarters, and leave the field free to his designs; but when he heard the cock repeat his salutation to the morn, which began to open on the rear of night, he could no longer restrain his indignation. Going to his own chamber, he filled a bason with cold water, and standing at some distance, discharged it full in the face of the gaping snorer, who, over and above the surprize occasioned by the application, was almost suffocated by the liquor that entered his mouth, and ran down into his windpipe. While he gasped like a person half drowned, without knowing the nature of his disaster, or remembering the situation in which he fell asleep, Peregrine retired to his own door, and, to his no small astonishment, from a long howl that invaded his ears, learned that the patient was no other than Pallet, who had now, for the third time, baulked his good fortune.

Enraged at the complicated trespasses of this unfortunate offender, he rushed from his apartment with a horse-whip, and encountering the painter in his flight, overturned him in the passage. There he exercised the instrument of his wrath with great severity, on pretence of mistaking him for some presumptuous cur, which had

had diſturbed the repoſe of the inn; nay, when he called aloud for mercy in a ſupplicating tone, and his chaſtiſer could no longer pretend to treat him as a quadruped, ſuch was the virulence of the young gentleman's indignation, that he could not help declaring his ſatisfaction, by telling Pallet he had richly deſerved the puniſhment he had undergone, for his madneſs, folly, and impertinence, in contriving and executing ſuch idle ſchemes, as had no other tendency than that of plaguing his neighbours.

Pallet proteſted, with great vehemence, that he was innocent, as the child unborn, of an intention to give umbrage to any perſon whatever, except the Iſraelite and his doxy, who he knew had incurred his diſpleaſure. 'But, as God is my Saviour!' ſaid he, 'I believe I am perſecuted with witchcraft, and begin to think that damn'd prieſt is an agent for the devil; for he has been but two nights in our company, during which I have not cloſed an eye; but, on the contrary, have been tormented by all the fiends of hell.' Pickle peeviſhly replied, that his torments had been occaſioned by his own fooliſh imagination; and aſked how he came to howl in that corner. The painter, who did not think proper to own the truth, ſaid he had been tranſported thither by ſome preternatural conveyance, and ſouſed in water by an inviſible hand. The youth, in hope of profiting by his abſence, adviſed him to retire immediately to his bed, and by ſleep ſtrive to comfort his brain, which ſeemed to be not a little diſordered by the want of that refreſhment. Pallet himſelf began to be very much of the ſame way of thinking; and, in compliance with ſuch wholeſome counſel, betook himſelf to reſt, muttering prayers all the way for the recovery of his own underſtanding.

Pickle attended him to his own chamber, and locking him up, put the key in his own pocket, that he might not have it in his power to interrupt him again: but in his return he was met by Mr. Jolter, and the doctor, who had been a ſecond time alarmed by the painter's

painter's cries, and come to enquire about this new adventure. Half frantick with ſuch a ſeries of diſappointments, he curſed them in his heart for their unſeaſonable appearance. When they queſtioned him about Pallet, he told them he had found him ſtark ſtaring mad, howling in a corner, and wet to the ſkin, and conducted him to his room, where he was now a-bed. The phyſician hearing this circumſtance, made a merit of his vanity; and, under pretence of concern for the patient's welfare, deſired he might have an opportunity of examining the ſymptoms of his diſorder, without loſs of time; alledging, that many diſeaſes might have been ſtifled in the birth, which afterwards baffled all the endeavours of the medical art. The young gentleman accordingly delivered the key, and once more withdrew into his own chamber, with a view of ſeizing the firſt occaſion that ſhould preſent itſelf of renewing his application to his Amanda's door; while the doctor, in his way to Pallet's apartment, hinted to the governor his ſuſpicion, that the patient laboured under that dreadful ſymptom called the hydrophobia, which he obſerved had ſometimes appeared in perſons who were not previouſly bit by a mad dog. This conjecture he founded upon the howl he uttered when he was ſouſed with water, and began to recollect certain circumſtances of the painter's behaviour for ſome days paſt, which now he could plainly perceive had prognoſticated ſome ſuch calamity. He then aſcribed the diſtemper to the violent frights he had lately undergone; affirmed that the affair of the Baſtile had made ſuch a violent encroachment upon his underſtanding, that his manner of thinking and ſpeaking was entirely altered. By a theory of his own invention, he explained the effects of fear upon a looſe ſyſtem of nerves, and demonſtrated the *modus* in which the animal ſpirits operate upon the ideas and power of imagination.

This diſquiſition, which was communicated at the painter's door, might have laſted till breakfaſt, had not Jolter reminded him of his own maxim, *Venienti occurrite morbo*; upon which he put the key to immediate

uſe,

ufe, and they walked foftly towards the bed, where the patient lay extended at full length in the arms of fleep. The phyfician took notice of his breathing hard, and his mouth being open; and from thefe diagnofticks declared, that the liquidum nervofum was intimately affected, and the faliva impregnated with the fpiculated particles of the virus, howfoever contracted. This fentence was ftill farther confirmed by the ftate of his pulfe, which being full and flow, indicated an oppreffed circulation, from a lofs of elafticity in the propelling arteries. He propofed that he fhould immediately fuffer a fecond afperfion of water, which would not only contribute to the cure, but alfo certify them beyond all poffibility of doubt, with regard to the ftate of the difeafe: for it would evidently appear, from the manner in which he would bear the application, whether or not his horror of water amounted to a confirmed hydrophobia. Mr. Jolter, in compliance with this propofal, began to empty a bottle of water, which he found in the room in a bafon; when he was interrupted by the prefcriber, who advifed him to ufe the contents of the chamber-pot, which being impregnated with falt, would operate more effectually than pure element. Thus directed, the governor lifted up the veffel, which was replete with medicine, and with one turn of his hand difcharged the whole healing inundation upon the ill-omen'd patient, who waking in the utmoft diftraction of horror, yelled moft hideoufly, juft at the time when Peregrine had brought his miftrefs to a parley, and entertained hopes of being admitted into her chamber.

Terrified at this exclamation, fhe inftantly broke off the treaty, befeeching him to retire from the door, that her honour might receive no injury from his being found in that place: and he had juft enough of recollection left to fee the neceffity of obeying the order; in conformity to which he retreated well nigh deprived of his fenfes, and almoft perfuaded, that fo many unaccountable difappointments muft have proceeded from fome

ſupernatural cauſe, of which the idiot Pallet was no more than the involuntary inſtrument.

Meanwhile, the doctor having aſcertained the malady of the patient, whoſe cries, interrupted by frequent ſobs and ſighs, he interpreted into the barking of a dog; and having no more ſalt water at hand, reſolved t renew the bath with ſuch materials as chance would afford. He actually laid hold of the bottle and baſon; but by this time the painter had recovered the uſe of his ſenſes ſo well, as to perceive his drift; and ſtarting up like a frantick Bedlamite, ran directly to his ſword, ſwearing with many h rrid imprecations, that he would murder them both immediately, if he ſhould be hanged before dinner. They did not chuſe to wait the iſſue of his threat, but retired with ſuch precipitation, that the phyſician had almoſt diſlocated his ſhoulder, by running againſt one ſide of the entry. Jolter having pulled the door after him, and turned the key, betook himſelf to flight, roaring aloud for aſſiſtance. His colleague ſeeing the door ſecured, valued himſelf upon his reſolution, and exhorted him to return; declaring, that for his own part, he was more afraid of the madman's teeth than of his weapon; and admoniſhing the governor to re-enter, and execute what they had left undone. 'Go in,' ſaid he, 'without fear or apprehenſion, and if any accident ſhall happen to you, either from his ſlaver or his ſword, I will aſſiſt you with my advice, which from this ſtation I can more coolly and diſtinctly adminiſter, than I ſhould be able to ſupply, if my ideas were diſturbed, or my attention engaged in any perſonal concern.' Jolter, who could make no objection to the juſtneſs of the concluſion, frankly owned that he had no inclination to try the experiment; obſerving, that ſelf-preſervation was the firſt law of nature; that his connections with the unhappy lunatick were but ſlight; and that it could not be reaſonably expected that he would run ſuch riſks for his ſervice, as were declined by one who had ſet out with him from England on the footing of a companion. This inſinuation introduced a diſpute

pute upon the nature of benevolence, and the moral ſenſe, which (the republican argued) exiſted independent of any private conſideration, and could never be affected by any contingent circumſtance of time and fortune; while the other, who abhorred his principles, aſſerted the duties and excellence of private friendſhip, with infinite rancour of altercation.

During the hotteſt of the argument, they were joined by the capuchin, who being aſtoniſhed to ſee them thus virulently engaged at the door, and to hear the painter bellowing within the chamber, conjured them, in the name of God, to tell him the cauſe of that confuſion, which had kept the whole houſe in continual alarm during the beſt part of the night, and ſeemed to be the immediate work of the devil and his angels. When the governor gave him to underſtand, that Pallet was viſited with an evil ſpirit, he muttered a prayer of St. Antonio de Padua, and undertook to cure the painter, provided he could be ſecured ſo as that he might, without danger to himſelf, burn part of a certain relick under his noſe, which he aſſured them was equal to the miraculous power of Eleazar's ring. They expreſſed great curioſity to know what this treaſure was; and the prieſt was prevailed upon to tell them in confidence, that it was a collection of the parings of the nails belonging to thoſe two madmen, whom Jeſus purged of the legion of devils that afterwards entered the ſwine. So ſaying, he pulled from one of his pockets a ſmall box, containing about an ounce of the paring of an horſe's hoof; at ſight of which, the governor could not help ſmiling, on account of the groſſneſs of the impoſition. The doctor aſked, with a ſupercilious ſmile, whether thoſe maniacks whom Jeſus cured, were of the ſorrel complexion, or dapple grey; for, from the texture of theſe parings, he could prove, that the original owners were of the quadruped order, and even diſtinguiſh, that their feet had been fortified with ſhoes of iron.

The mendicant, who bore an inveterate grudge againſt

againſt this ſon of Æſculapius, ever ſince he had made ſo free with the catholick religion, replied, with great bitterneſs, that he was a wretch with whom no Chriſtian ought to communicate; that the vengeance of Heaven would one day overtake him, on account of his profanity; and that his heart was ſhod with a metal much harder than iron, which nothing but hell-fire would be able to melt.

It was now broad day, and all the ſervants of the inn were a-foot. Peregrine, ſeeing it would be impoſſible to obtain any ſort of indemnification for the time he had loſt; and the perturbation of his ſpirits hindering him from enjoying repoſe, which was, moreover, obſtructed by the noiſe of Pallet and his attendants, put on his cloaths at once, and in exceeding ill humour, arrived at the ſpot where this triumvirate ſtood debating about the means of overpowering the furious painter, who ſtill continued his ſong of oaths and execrations, and made ſundry efforts to break open the door. Chagrined as our hero was, he could not help laughing when he heard how the patient had been treated; and his indignation changing into compaſſion, he called to him through the key-hole, deſiring to know the reaſon of his diſtracted behaviour. Pallet no ſooner recognized his voice, than lowering his own to a whimpering tone, 'My dear friend,' ſaid he, 'I have at laſt detected the ruffians who have perſecuted me ſo much. I caught them in the fact of ſuffocating me with cold water; and by the Lord I will be revenged, or may I never live to finiſh my Cleopatra. For the love of God! open the door, and I will make that conceited Pagan, that pretender to taſte, that falſe devotee of the ancients, who poiſons people with ſillikickabies and devil's dung; I ſay, I will make him a monument of my wrath, and an example to all the cheats and impoſtures of the faculty; and as for that thick-headed, inſolent pedant, his confederate, who emptied my own jordan upon me while I ſlept, he had better have been in his beloved Paris, botching ſchemes for his friend the pretender,

pretender, than incur the effects of my resentment. Gadsbodikins! I won't leave him a windpipe for the hangman to stop, at the end of another rebellion.'

Pickle told him, his conduct had been so extravagant, as to confirm the whole company in the belief, that he was actually deprived of his senses; on which supposition, Mr. Jolter and the doctor had acted the part of friends, in doing that which they thought most conducive to his recovery; so that their conduct merited his thankful acknowledgment, instead of his frantick menaces; that for his own part, he would be the first to condemn him, as one utterly bereft of his wits, and give orders for his being secured as a madman, unless he would immediately give a proof of his sanity, by laying aside his sword, composing his spirits, and thanking his injured friends for their care of his person. This alternative quieted his transports in a moment; he was terrified at the apprehension of being treated like a bedlamite, being dubious of the state of his own brain; and, on the other hand had conceived such an horror and antipathy for his tormentors, that, far from believing himself obliged by what they had done, he could not even think of them without the utmost rage and detestation. He therefore, in the most tranquil voice he could assume, protested, that he never was less out of his senses than at present, though he did not know how long he might retain them, if he should be considered in the light of a lunatick; that in order to prove his being *compos mentis*, he was willing to sacrifice the resentment he so justly harboured against those who by their malice had brought him to this pass: but, as he apprehended, it would be the greatest sign of madness he could exhibit, to thank them for the mischiefs they had brought upon him, he desired to be excused from making any such concession; and swore he would endure every thing, rather than be guilty of such mean absurdity.

Peregrine held a consultation upon this reply, when the governor and physician strenuously argued against

any capitulation with a maniack, and propoſed that ſome method might be taken to ſeize, fetter, and convey him into a dark room, where he might be treated according to the rules of art. But the capuchin underſtanding the circumſtances of the caſe, undertook to reſtore him to his former ſtate, without having any recourſe to ſuch violent meaſures. Pickle, who was a better judge of the affair than any perſon preſent, opened the door without farther heſitation, and diſplayed the poor painter ſtanding with a woeful countenance, ſhivering in his ſhirt, which was as wet as if he had been dragged through the Dender: a ſpectacle which gave ſuch offence to the chaſte eyes of the Hebrew's miſtreſs, who was by this time one of the ſpectators, that ſhe turned her head another way, and withdrew to her own room, exclaiming againſt the indecent practices of men.

Pallet, ſeeing the young gentleman enter, ran to him, and, ſhaking him by the hand, called him his beſt friend, and ſaid he had reſcued him from thoſe who had a deſign againſt his life. The prieſt would have produced his parings, and applied them to his noſe; but was hindered by Pickle, who adviſed the patient to ſhift himſelf, and put on his cloaths. This being done, with great order and deliberation, Mr. Jolter, who with the doctor had kept a wary diſtance, in expectation of ſeeing ſome ſtrange effects of his diſtraction, began to believe that he had been guilty of a miſtake, and accuſed the phyſician of having miſled him by his falſe diagnoſtick. The doctor ſtill inſiſted upon his former declaration; aſſuring him, that although Pallet enjoyed a ſhort interval for the preſent, the delirium would ſoon recur unleſs they would profit by this momentary calm, and order him to be blooded, bliſtered, and purged, with all imaginary diſpatch.

The governor, however, notwithſtanding this caution, advanced to the injured party, and begged pardon for the ſhare he had in giving him ſuch diſturbance. He declared in the moſt ſolemn manner, that he

had no other intention than that of contributing towards his welfare; and that his behaviour was the result of the physician's prescription, which he affirmed was absolutely necessary for the recovery of his health.

The painter, who had very little gall in his disposition, was satisfied with his apology; but his resentment, which was before divided, now glowed with double fire against his first fellow-traveller, whom he looked upon as the author of all the mischances he had undergone, and marked out for his vengeance accordingly. Yet the doors of reconciliation were not shut against the doctor, who, with great justice, might have transferred this load of offence from himself to Peregrine; who was, without doubt, the source of the painter's misfortune: but, in that case, he must have owned himself mistaken in his medical capacity; and he did not think the friendship of Pallet important enough to be retrieved by such condescension; so that he resolved to neglect him entirely, and gradually forget the former correspondence he had maintained with a person whom he deemed so unworthy of his notice.

CHAP. XXIV.

Peregrine, almost distracted with his Disappointments, conjures the fair Fleming to permit his Visits at Brussels. She withdraws from his Pursuit.

THINGS being thus adjusted, and all the company dressed, they went to breakfast about five in the morning; and in less than an hour after were seated in the diligence, where a profound silence prevailed; Peregrine, who used to be the life of the society, being extremely pensive and melancholy on account of his mishap; the Israelite and his dulcinea dejected in consequence of their disgrace; the poet absorpt in lofty meditation; the painter in schemes of revenge; while Jolter, rocked by the motion of the carriage, made himself amends for the want of rest he had sustained; and the mendicant, with his fair charge, were infected by the cloudy aspect of our youth, in whose disappointment each of them, for different reasons, bore no

inconſiderable ſhare. This general languor and receſs from all bodily exerciſe, diſpoſed them all to receive the gentle yoke of ſlumber; and in half an hour after they had embarked, there was not one of them awake, except our hero and his miſtreſs, unleſs the capuchin was pleaſed to counterfeit ſleep, in order to indulge our young gentleman with an opportunity of enjoying ſome private converſation with his beauteous ward.

Peregrine did not neglect the occaſion; but, on the contrary, ſeized the firſt minute, and, in gentle murmurs, lamented his hard hap in being thus the ſport of fortune. He aſſured her, (and that with great ſincerity) that all the croſs accidents of his life had not coſt him one half of the vexation and keenneſs of chagrin which he had ſuffered laſt night; and that now he was on the brink of parting from her, he ſhould be overwhelmed with the blackeſt deſpair, if ſhe would not extend her compaſſion ſo far as to give him an opportunity of ſighing at her feet in Bruſſels, during the few days his affairs would permit him to ſpend in that city.

This young lady, with an air of mortification, expreſſed her ſorrow for being the innocent cauſe of his anxiety; ſaid, ſhe hoped laſt night's adventure would be a ſalutary warning to both their ſouls; for ſhe was perſuaded, that her virtue was protected by the intervention of Heaven; that whatever impreſſion it might have made upon him, ſhe was enabled by it to adhere to that duty from which her paſſion had begun to ſwerve; and beſeeching him to forget her for his own peace, gave him to underſtand, that neither the plan ſhe had laid down for her own conduct, nor the dictates of her honour, would allow her to receive his viſits, or carry on any other correſpondence with him, while ſhe was reſtricted by the articles of her marriage-vow.

This explanation produced ſuch a violent effect upon her admirer, that he was for ſome minutes deprived of the faculty of ſpeech; which he no ſooner recovered, than he gave vent to the moſt unbridled tranſports of paſſion. He taxed her with barbarity and indifference;

told her, that ſhe had robbed him of his reaſon and internal peace; that he would follow her to the ends of the earth, and ceaſe to live than ceaſe to love her; that he would ſacrifice the innocent fool who had been the occaſion of all this diſquiet, and murder every man whom he conſidered as an obſtruction to his views. In a word, his paſſions, which had continued ſo long in a ſtate of the higheſt fermentation, together with the want of that repoſe which calms and quiets the perturbation of the ſpirits, had wrought him up to a pitch of real diſtraction. While he uttered theſe delirious expreſſions, the tears ran down his cheeks; and he underwent ſuch agitation, that the tender heart of the fair Fleming was affected with his condition: and, while her own face was bedewed with the ſtreams of ſympathy, ſhe begged him, for Heaven's ſake, to be compoſed; and promiſed, for his ſatisfaction, to abate ſomewhat of the rigour of her purpoſe. Conſoled by this kind declaration, he recollected himſelf; and taking out his pencil, gave her his addreſs, when ſhe had aſſured him, that he ſhould hear from her in four and twenty hours at fartheſt, after their ſeparation.

Thus ſoothed, he regained the empire of himſelf, and by degrees recovered his ſerenity. But this was not the caſe with his Amanda, who, from this ſample of his diſpoſition, dreaded the impetuoſity of his youth, and was effectually deterred from entering into any engagement that might ſubject her peace and reputation to the raſh effects of ſuch a violent ſpirit. Though ſhe was captivated by his perſon and accompliſhments, ſhe had reflected enough to foreſee, that the longer ſhe countenanced his paſſion, her own heart would be more and more irretrievably engaged, and the quiet of her life the more expoſed to continual interruption. She therefore profited by theſe conſiderations, and a ſenſe of religious honour, which helped her to withſtand the ſuggeſtions of inclination; and reſolved to amuſe her lover with falſe hopes, until ſhe ſhould have it in her power to relinquiſh his converſation, without running any riſk

of

of ſuffering by the inconſiderate ſallies of his love. It was with this view, that ſhe deſired he would not inſiſt upon attending her to her mother's houſe, when the diligence arrived at Bruſſels; and he, cajoled by her artifice, took a formal leave of her, together with the other ſtrangers, fixing his habitation at the inn to which he and his fellow-travellers had been directed, in the impatient expectation of receiving a kind ſummons from her within the limited time.

Meanwhile, in order to divert his imagination, he went to ſee the ſtadthouſe, park, and arſenal; took a ſuperficial view of the bookſellers' cabinet of curioſities, and ſpent the evening at the Italian opera, which was at that time exhibited for the entertainment of Prince Charles of Lorrain, then governor of the Low Countries. In ſhort, the ſtated period was almoſt elapſed, when Peregrine received a letter to this purpoſe.

'SIR,

'IF you knew what violence I do my own 'heart, in declaring, that I have withdrawn myſelf for 'ever from your addreſſes, you would ſurely applaud 'the ſacrifice I make to virtue, and ſtrive to imitate 'this example of ſelf-denial. Yes, Sir, Heaven hath 'lent me grace to ſtruggle with my guilty paſſion, and 'henceforth to avoid the dangerous ſight of him who 'inſpired it. I therefore conjure you, by the regard 'you ought to have for the eternal welfare of us both, 'as well as by the eſteem and affection you profeſs, to 'war with your unruly inclination, and deſiſt from all 'attempts of fruſtrating the laudable reſolution I have 'made. Seek not to invade the peace of one who loves 'you, to diſturb the quiet of a family that never did 'you wrong, and to alienate the thoughts of a weak 'woman from a deſerving man, who, by the moſt ſacred claim, ought to have the full poſſeſſion of her 'heart.'

This billet, without either date or ſubſcription, baniſhed all remains of diſcretion from the mind of our hero,

hero, who ran instantly to the landlord in all the extasy of madness, and demanded to see the messenger who brought the letter, on pain of putting his whole family to the sword. The innkeeper, terrified by his looks and menaces, fell upon his knees, protesting, in the face of Heaven, that he was utterly ignorant and innocent of any thing that could give him offence, and that the billet was brought by a person whom he did not know, and who retired immediately, saying it required no answer. He then gave utterance to his fury in a thousand imprecations and invectives against the writer, whom he dishonoured with the appellation of a coquette, a jilt, an adventurer, who, by means of a pimping priest, had defrauded him of his money. He denounced vengeance against the mendicant, whom he swore he would destroy, if ever he should set eyes on him again. The painter unluckily appearing during this paroxism of rage, he seized him by the throat, saying, he was ruined by his accursed folly; and, in all likelihood, poor Pallet would have been strangled, had not Jolter interposed in his behalf, beseeching his pupil to have mercy upon the sufferer, and with infinite anxiety desiring to know the cause of this violent assault. He received no answer, but a string of incoherent curses. When the painter, with unspeakable astonishment, took God to witness that he had done nothing to disoblige him, the governor began to think, in sad earnest, that Peregrine's vivacity had at length risen to the transports of actual madness, and was himself almost distracted with this supposition. That he might the better judge what remedy ought to be applied, he used his whole influence, and practised all his eloquence upon the youth, in order to learn the immediate cause of his delirium. He employed the most pathetick intreaties, and even shed tears in the course of his supplication; so that Pickle (the first violence of the hurricane being blown over) was ashamed of his own imprudence, and retired to his chamber, in order to recollect his dissipated thoughts: there he shut himself up, and

for

for the ſecond time peruſing the fatal epiſtle, began to waver in his opinion of the author's character and intention. He ſometimes conſidered her as one of thoſe nymphs, who, under the maſk of innocence and ſimplicity, practiſe upon the hearts and purſes of unwary and inexperienced youths: this was the ſuggeſtion of his wrath, inflamed by diſappointment; but, when he reflected upon the circumſtances of her behaviour, and recalled her particular charms to his imagination, the ſeverity of his cenſure gave way, and his heart declared in favour of her ſincerity. Yet even this conſideration aggravated the ſenſe of his loſs, and he was in danger of relapſing into his former diſtraction, when his paſſion was a little becalmed by the hope of ſeeing her again, either by accident, or in the courſe of a diligent and minute enquiry, which he forthwith reſolved to ſet on foot. He had reaſon to believe that her own heart would eſpouſe his cauſe, in ſpite of her virtue's determination, and did not deſpair of meeting with the capuchin, whoſe good offices he knew he could at any time command. Comforted with theſe reflections, the tempeſt of his ſoul ſubſided. In leſs than two hours he joined his company, with an air of compoſure, and aſked the painter's forgiveneſs for the freedom he had taken; the cauſe of which he promiſed hereafter to explain. Pallet was glad of being reconciled on any terms to one whoſe countenance ſupported him in equilibrio with his antagoniſt the doctor; and Mr. Jolter was rejoiced beyond meaſure at his pupil's recovery.

CHAP. XXV.

Peregrine meets with Mrs. Hornbeck, and is conſoled for his Loſs. His Valet de Chambre is embroiled with her Duenna; whom, however, he finds Means to appeaſe.

EVERY thing having thus reſumed its natural channel, they dined together in great tranquillity. In the afternoon, Peregrine, on pretence of ſtaying at home to write letters, while his companions were at the coffee-houſe, ordered a coach to be called, and with his valet

valet de chambre, who was the only perfon acquainted with the prefent ftate of his thoughts, fet out for the Promenade, to which all the ladies of fafhion refort in the evening, during the fummer feafon, in hopes of feeing his fugitive among the reft.

Having made a circuit round the walk, and narrowly obferved every female in the place, he perceived at fome diftance, the livery of Hornbeck upon a lacquey that ftood at the back of a coach: upon which, he ordered his man to reconnoitre the faid carriage, while he pulled up his glaffes that he might not be difcovered, before he fhould have received fome intelligence, by which he might conduct himfelf on this unexpected occafion, that already began to interfere with the purpofe of his coming thither, though it could not difpute his attention with the idea of his charming unknown.

His Mercury having made his obfervations, reported, that there was nobody in the coach but Mrs. Hornbeck and an elderly woman, who had all the air of a duenna, and that the fervant was not the fame footman who had attended them in France. Encouraged by this information, our hero ordered himfelf to be driven clofe up to that fide of their convenience on which his old miftrefs fat, and accofted her with the ufual falutation. This lady no fooner beheld her gallant, than her cheeks reddened with a double glow; and fhe exclaimed, ‘ Dear brother, I am overjoyed to fee you! Pray come into our coach.’ He took the hint immediately; and complying with her requeft, embraced this new fifter with great affection.

Perceiving that her attendant was very much furprized and alarmed at this unexpected meeting, fhe, in order to banifh her fufpicion, and at the fame time give her lover his cue, told him that his brother (meaning her hufband) was gone to the Spa for a few weeks, by the advice of phyficians, on account of his ill ftate of health; and that, from his laft letter, fhe had the pleafure to tell him, he was in a fair way of doing well. The young gentleman expreffed his fatisfaction at this

piece

piece of news; obſerving, with an air of fraternal concern, that if his brother had not made too free with his conſtitution, his friends in England would have had no occaſion to repine at his abſence and want of health, by which he was baniſhed from his own country and connections. He then aſked, with an affectation of ſurprize, why ſhe had not accompanied her ſpouſe; and was given to underſtand, that his tenderneſs of affection would not ſuffer him to expoſe her to the fatigues of the journey, which lay among rocks that were almoſt inacceſſible.

The duenna's doubts being eaſed by this preamble of converſation, he changed the ſubject to the pleaſures of the place; and among other ſuch queſtions, enquired if ſhe had as yet viſited Verſailles. This is a publick-houſe, ſituated upon the canal at the diſtance of about two miles from town, and accommodated with tolerable gardens for the entertainment of company. When ſhe replied in the negative, he propoſed to accompany her thither immediately; but the governante, who had hitherto ſat ſilent, objected to this propoſal; telling him in broken Engliſh, that as the lady was under her care, ſhe could not anſwer to Mr. Hornbeck for allowing her to viſit ſuch a ſuſpicious place. 'As for that matter, Madam,' ſaid the confident gallant, 'give yourſelf no trouble; the conſequences ſhall be at my peril, and I will undertake to inſure you againſt my brother's reſentment.' So ſaying, he directed the coachman to the place, and ordered his own to follow, under the auſpices of his valet de chambre; while the old gentlewoman, over-ruled by his aſſurance, quietly ſubmitted to his authority.

Being arrived at the place, he handed the ladies from the coach, and then, for the firſt time, obſerved that the duenna was lame; a circumſtance of which he did not ſcruple to take the advantage: for they had ſcarce alighted, and drank a glaſs of wine, when he adviſed his ſiſter to enjoy a walk in the garden; and although the attendant made ſhift to keep them almoſt always

in

in view, they enjoyed a detached converſation, in which Peregrine learned, that the true cauſe of her being left behind at Bruſſels, whilſt her huſband proceeded to Spa, was his dread of the company and familiarities of that place, to which his jealouſy durſt not expoſe her; and that ſhe had lived three weeks in a convent at Liſle, from which ſhe was delivered by his own free motion, becauſe indeed he could no longer exiſt without her company; and laſtly, our lover underſtood, that her governante was a mere dragon, who had been recommended to him by a Spaniſh merchant, whoſe wife ſhe attended to her dying day; but ſhe very much queſtioned whether or not her fidelity was proof enough againſt money and ſtrong waters. Peregrine aſſured her the experiment ſhould be tried before parting; and they agreed to paſs the night at Verſailles, provided his endeavours ſhould ſucceed.

Having exerciſed themſelves in this manner, until his duenna's ſpirits were pretty much exhauſted, that ſhe might be the better diſpoſed to recruit them with a glaſs of liquor, they returned to their apartment, and the cordial was recommended and received in a bumper: but as it did not produce ſuch a viſible alteration as the ſanguine hopes of Pickle had made him expect, and the old gentlewoman obſerved that it began to be late, and that the gates would be ſhut in a little time, he filled up a parting glaſs, and pledged her in equal quantity. Her blood was too much chilled to be warmed even by this extraordinary doſe, which made immediate innovation in the brain of our youth, who in the gaiety of his imagination overwhelmed this She-Argus with ſuch profuſion of gallantry, that ſhe was more intoxicated with his expreſſions than with the ſpirits ſhe had drank. When in the courſe of toying he dropped a purſe into her boſom, ſhe ſeemed to forget how the night wore, and with the approbation of her charge, aſſented to his propoſal of having ſomething for ſupper.

This was a great point which our adventurer had gained, and yet he plainly perceived that the governante

miſtook

miſtook his meaning, by giving herſelf credit for all the paſſion he had profeſſed. As this error could be rectified by no other means than thoſe of plying her with the bottle, until her diſtinguiſhing faculties ſhould be overpowered, he promoted a quick circulation. She did him juſtice, without any manifeſt ſigns of inebriation, ſo long, that his own eyes began to reel in the ſockets; and he found that before his ſcheme could be accompliſhed, he ſhould be effectually unfitted for all the purpoſes of love. He therefore had recourſe to his valet de chambre, who underſtood the hint as ſoon as it was given, and readily undertook to perform the part, of which his maſter had played the prelude. This affair being ſettled to his ſatisfaction, and the night at odds with morning, he took an opportunity of imparting to the ear of this aged dulcinea a kind of whiſper, importing a promiſe of viſiting her, when his ſiſter ſhould be retired to her own chamber, and an earneſt deſire of leaving her door unlocked.

This agreeable intimation being communicated, he conveyed a caution of the ſame nature to Mrs. Hornbeck, as he led her to her apartment; and darkneſs and ſilence no ſooner prevailed in the houſe, than he and his truſty ſquire ſet out on their different voyages. Every thing would have ſucceeded according to their wiſh, had not the valet de chambre ſuffered himſelf to fall aſleep at the ſide of his inamorata, and in the agitation of a violent dream, exclaimed in a voice ſo unlike that of her ſuppoſed adorer, that ſhe diſtinguiſhed the difference at once. Waking him with a pinch and a loud ſhriek, ſhe threatened to proſecute him for a rape, and reviled him with all the epithets her rage and diſappointment could ſuggeſt. The Frenchman finding himſelf detected, behaved with great temper and addreſs: he begged ſhe would compoſe herſelf, on account of her own reputation, which was extremely dear to him; proteſting, that he had a moſt inviolable eſteem for her perſon. His repreſentations had weight with the duenna; who, upon recollecting, comprehended the whole affair,

affair, and thought it would be her intereſt to bring matters to an accommodation. She therefore admitted the apologies of her bed-fellow, provided he would promiſe to atone by marriage for the injury ſhe had ſuſtained; and in this particular he ſet her heart at eaſe by repeated vows, which he uttered with ſurpriſing volubility, though without any intention to perform the leaſt tittle of their contents.

Peregrine, who had been alarmed by her exclamations, and run to the door with a view of interpoſing, according to the emergency of the caſe, overhearing the affair thus compromiſed, returned to his miſtreſs, who was highly entertained with an account of what had paſſed, foreſeeing, that for the future ſhe would be under no difficulty or reſtriction from the ſeverity of her guard.

CHAP. XXVI.

Hornbeck is informed of his Wife's Adventure with Peregrine, for whom he prepares a Stratagem, which is rendered ineffectual by the Information of Pipes. The Huſband is ducked for his Intention, and our Hero apprehended by the Patrole.

THERE was another perſon, however, ſtill ungained; and that was no other than her footman, whoſe ſecreſy our hero attempted to ſecure in the morning by an handſome preſent, which he received with many profeſſions of gratitude and devotion to his ſervice: yet this complaiſance was nothing but a cloak uſed to diſguiſe the deſign he harboured of making his maſter acquainted with the whole tranſaction. Indeed, this lacquey had been hired, not only as a ſpy upon his miſtreſs, but alſo as a check on the conduct of the governante, with promiſe of ample reward, if ever he ſhould diſcover any ſiniſter or ſuſpicious practices in the courſe of her behaviour. As for the footman, whom they had brought from England, he was retained in attendance upon the perſon of his maſter, whoſe confidence he had loſt, by adviſing him to gentle methods

 of

of reclaiming his lady, when her irregularities had subjected her to his wrath.

The Flemish valet, in consequence of the office he had undertaken, wrote to Hornbeck by the first post, giving an exact detail of the adventure at Versailles, with such a description of the pretended brother, as left the husband no room to think he could be any other person than his first dishonourer; and exasperated him to such a degree, that he resolved to lay an ambush for this invader, and at once disqualify him from disturbing his repose, by maintaining farther correspondence with his wife. Meanwhile the lovers enjoyed themselves without restraint, and Peregrine's plan of enquiry after his dear unknown was for the present postponed. His fellow-travellers were confounded at his mysterious motions, which filled the heart of Jolter with anxiety and terror. This careful conductor was fraught with such experience of his pupil's disposition, that he trembled with the apprehension of some sudden accident, and lived in continual alarm, like a man that walks under the wall of a nodding tower. Nor did he enjoy any alleviation of his fears, when, upon telling the young gentleman, that the rest of the company were desirous of departing for Antwerp, he answered, they were at liberty to consult their own inclinations; but for his own part, he was resolved to stay in Brussels a few days longer. By this declaration the governor was confirmed in the opinion of his having some intrigue upon the anvil. In the bitterness of his vexation, he took the liberty of signifying his suspicion, and reminding him of the dangerous dilemmas to which he had been reduced by his former precipitation.

Peregrine took his caution in good part, and promised to behave with such circumspection as would screen him from any troublesome consequences for the future; but, nevertheless, behaved that same evening in such a manner, as plainly shewed, that his prudence was nothing else than vain speculation. He had made an appointment to spend the night, as usual, with Mrs.

Hornbeck; and about nine o'clock haſtened to her lodgings, when he was accoſted in the ſtreet by his old diſcarded friend Thomas Pipes; who, without any other preamble, told him, that for all he had turned him adrift, he did not chuſe to ſee him run full ſail into his enemy's harbour, without giving him timely notice of the danger. 'I'll tell you what,' ſaid he, 'mayhap you think I want to curry favour, that I may be taken in tow again; if you do, you have made a miſtake in your reckoning. I am old enough to be laid up, and have wherewithal to keep my planks from the weather. But this here is the affair; I have known you ſince you were no higher than a marlin ſpike, and ſhouldn't care to ſee you deprived of your rigging at theſe years; whereby I am informed by Hornbeck's man, whom I this afternoon fell in with by chance, as how his maſter has got intelligence of your boarding his wife, and has ſteered privately into this port, with a large compliment of hands, in order, d'ye ſee, to ſecure you while you are under the hatches. Now if ſo be as how you have a mind to give him a ſalt eel for his ſupper, here am I without hope of fee or reward, ready to ſtand by you as long as my timbers will ſtick together; and if I expect any recompence, may I be bound to eat oakum and drink bilge-water for life.

Startled at this information, Peregrine examined him upon the particulars of his diſcourſe with the lacquey; and when he underſtood that Hornbeck's intelligence flowed from the canal of his Flemiſh footman, he believed every circumſtance of Tom's report, thanked him for his warning, and after having reprimanded him for his miſbehaviour at Liſle, aſſured him that it would be his own fault if ever they ſhould part again. He then deliberated with himſelf whether or not he ſhould retort the purpoſe upon his adverſary; but when he conſidered that Hornbeck was not the aggreſſor, and made that unhappy huſband's caſe his own, he could not help acquitting his intention of revenge, though, in his opinion, it ought to have been executed

in a more honourable manner; and therefore he determined to chaſtiſe him for his want of ſpirit. Nothing, ſurely, can be more inſolent and unjuſt than this determination, which induced him to puniſh a perſon for his want of courage to redreſs the injury which he himſelf had done to his reputation and peace; and yet this barbarity of deciſion is authorized by the opinion and practice of mankind.

With theſe ſentiments he returned to the inn, and putting a pair of piſtols in his pocket, ordered his valet de chambre and Pipes to follow him at a ſmall diſtance, ſo as that they ſhould be within call in caſe of neceſſity; then poſted himſelf within thirty yards of his dulcinea's door. There he had not been above half an hour, when he perceived four men take their ſtations on the other ſide, with a view, as he gueſſed, to watch for his going in, that he might be taken unaware. But when they had tarried a conſiderable time in that corner, without reaping the fruits of their expectation, their leader, perſuaded that the gallant had gained admittance by ſome ſecret means, approached the door with his followers; who, according to the inſtructions they had received, no ſooner ſaw it opened, than they ruſhed in, leaving their employer in the ſtreet, where he thought his perſon would be leaſt endangered. Our adventurer ſeeing him alone, advanced with ſpeed, and clapping a piſtol to his breaſt, commanded him to follow his footſteps, without noiſe, on pain of immediate death.

Terrified at this ſudden apparition, Hornbeck obeyed in ſilence; and in a few minutes they arrived at the quay, where Pickle halting, gave him to underſtand that he was no ſtranger to his villainous deſign. Told him, that if he conceived himſelf injured by any circumſtance of his conduct, he would now give him an opportunity of reſenting the wrong, in a manner becoming a man of honour. 'You have a ſword about you,' ſaid he, 'or if you don't chuſe to put the affair on that iſſue, here is a brace of piſtols; take which you pleaſe.'

please.' Such an addreſs could not fail to diſconcert a man of his character. After ſome heſitation, he in a faultering accent denied that his deſign was to mutilate Mr. Pickle, but that he thought himſelf entitled to the benefit of the law, by which he would have obtained a divorce, if he could have procured evidence of his wife's infidelity; and with that view he had employed people to take advantage of the information he had received. With regard to his alternative, he declined it entirely, becauſe he could not ſee what ſatisfaction he ſhould enjoy, in being ſhot through the head, or run through the lungs, by a perſon who had already wronged him in an irreparable manner. Laſtly, his fear made him propoſe, that the affair ſhould be left to the arbitration of two creditable men, altogether unconcerned in the diſpute.

To theſe remonſtrances, Peregrine replied, in the ſtyle of a hot-headed young man, conſcious of his own unjuſtifiable behaviour, that every gentleman ought to be a judge of his own honour; and therefore he would ſubmit to the deciſion of no umpire whatſoever; that he would forgive his want of courage, which might be a natural infirmity, but his mean diſſimulation he could not pardon; that, as he was certified of the raſcally intent of his ambuſcade, by undoubted intelligence, he would treat him, not with a retaliation of his own treachery, but with ſuch indignity as a ſcoundrel deſerves to ſuffer, unleſs he would make one effort to maintain the character he aſſumed in life: ſo ſaying, he again preſented his piſtol, which being rejected as before, he called his two miniſters, and ordered them to duck him in the canal.

This command was pronounced and executed almoſt in the ſame breath, to the unſpeakable terror and diſorder of the poor ſhivering patient; who, having undergone the immerſion, ran about like a drowned rat, ſqueaking for aſſiſtance and revenge. His cries were overheard by the patrole, who, chancing to paſs that way, took him under their protection, and, in conſe-

quence of his complaint and information, went in purſuit of our adventurer and his attendants, who were ſoon overtaken and ſurrounded. Raſh and inconſiderate as the young gentleman was, he did not pretend to ſtand upon the defenſive againſt a file of muſqueteers, although Pipes had drawn his cutlaſs at their approach, but ſurrendered himſelf without oppoſition, and was conveyed to the main guard, where the commanding officer, engaged by his appearance and addreſs, treated him with all imaginable reſpect. Hearing the particulars of his adventure, he aſſured him that the prince would conſider the whole as a *tour de jeuneſſe*, and order him to be releaſed without delay.

Next morning, when this gentleman gave in his report, he made ſuch a favourable repreſentation of the priſoner, that our hero was on the point of being diſcharged, when Hornbeck preferred a complaint, accuſing him of a purpoſed aſſaſſination, and praying that ſuch puniſhment ſhould be inflicted upon him, as his highneſs ſhould think adequate to the nature of the crime. The prince, perplexed with this petition, in conſequence of which he foreſaw that he muſt diſoblige a Britiſh ſubject, ſent for the plaintiff, of whom he had ſome knowledge, and in perſon exhorted him to drop the proſecution, which would only ſerve to propagate his own ſhame. But Hornbeck was too much incenſed to liſten to any propoſal of that kind, and peremptorily demanded juſtice againſt the priſoner, whom he repreſented as an obſcure adventurer, who had made repeated attempts upon his honour and his life. Prince Charles told him, that what he had adviſed was in the capacity of a friend; but, ſince he inſiſted upon his acting as a magiſtrate, the affair ſhould be examined, and determined according to the dictates of juſtice and truth. The plaintiff being diſmiſſed with this promiſe, the defendant was in his turn brought before the judge, whoſe prepoſſeſſion in his favour was in a great meaſure weakened by what his antagoniſt had ſaid to the prejudice of his birth and reputation.

CHAP. XXVII.

Peregrine is releaſed. Jolter confounded at his myſterious Conduct. A Conteſt happens between the Poet and Painter, who are reconciled by the Mediation of their Fellow-Travellers.

OUR hero, underſtanding from ſome expreſſions which eſcaped the prince, that he was conſidered in the light of a ſharper and aſſaſſin, begged that he might have the liberty of ſending for ſome vouchers, that would probably vindicate his character from the malicious aſperſions of his adverſary. This permiſſion being granted, he wrote a letter to his governor, deſiring that he would bring to him the letters of recommendation which he had received from the Britiſh ambaſſador at Paris, and ſuch other papers as he thought conducive to evince the importance of his ſituation.

The billet was given in charge to one of the ſubaltern officers on duty, who carried it to the inn, and demanded to ſpeak with Mr. Jolter. Pallet, who happened to be at the door, when this meſſenger arrived, and heard him enquire for the tutor, ran directly to that gentleman's apartment, and in manifeſt diſorder told him, that a huge fellow of a ſoldier, with a monſtrous pairs of whiſkers, and a fur-cap as big as a buſhel, was aſking for him at the door. The poor governor began to ſhake at this intimation, though he was not conſcious of having committed any thing that could attract the attention of the ſtate. When the officer appeared at his chamber-door, his confuſion increaſed to ſuch a degree, that his perception ſeemed to vaniſh, and the ſubaltern repeated the purport of his errand three times, before he could comprehend his meaning, or venture to receive the letter which he preſented. At length, he ſummoned all his fortitude, and having peruſed the epiſtle, his terror ſunk into anxiety. His ingenious fear immediately ſuggeſted, that Peregrine was confined in a dungeon, for ſome outrage he had committed. He ran with great agitation to a

trunk,

trunk, and taking out a bundle of papers, followed his conductor, being attended by the painter, to whom he had hinted his apprehension. When they passed through the guard, which was under arms, the hearts of both died within them; and when they came into the presence, there was such an expression of awful horror in the countenance of Jolter, that the prince observing his dismay, was pleased to encourage him with an assurance that he had nothing to fear. Thus comforted, he recollected himself so well as to understand his pupil, when he desired him to produce the ambassador's letters; some of which being open, were immediately read by his highness, who was personally acquainted with the writer, and knew several of the noblemen to whom they were addressed. These recommendations were so warm, and represented the young gentleman in such an advantageous light, that the prince, convinced of the injustice his character had suffered by the misrepresentation of Hornbeck, took our hero, by the hand, asked pardon for the doubts he had entertained of his honour, declared him from that moment at liberty, ordered his domesticks to be enlarged, and offered him his countenance and protection, as long as he should remain in the Austrian Netherlands. At the same time, he cautioned him against indiscretion in the course of his gallantries; and took his word and honour, that he should drop all measures of resentment against the person of Hornbeck, during his residence in that place. The delinquent, thus honourably acquitted, thanked the prince in the most respectful manner for his generosity and candour, and retired with his two friends, who were amazed and bewildered in their thoughts at what they had seen and heard, the whole adventure still remaining without the sphere of their comprehension, which was not at all enlarged by the unaccountable appearance of Pipes, who, with the valet de chambre, joined them at the castle-gate. Had Jolter been a man of a luxurious imagination, his brain would undoubtedly have suffered in the investigation of

of his pupil's myſterious conduct, which he ſtrove in vain to unravel; but his intellects were too ſolid to be affected by the miſcarriage of his invention; and as Peregrine did not think proper to make him acquainted with the cauſe of his being apprehended, he contented himſelf with ſuppoſing that there was a lady in the caſe.

The painter, whoſe imagination was of a more flimſy texture, formed a thouſand chimerical conjectures, which he communicated to Pickle in imperfect inſinuations; hoping, by his anſwers and behaviour, to diſcover the truth; but the youth, in order to tantalize him, eluded all his enquiries, with ſuch appearance of induſtry and art, as heightened his curioſity, while it diſappointed his aim, and inflamed him to ſuch a degree of impatience, that his wits began to be unſettled. Then Peregrine was fain to recompoſe his brain, by telling him in confidence that he had been arreſted as a ſpy. This ſecret he found more intolerable than his former uncertainty; he ran from one apartment to another, like a gooſe in the agonies of egg-laying, with an intention of diſburdening his important load; but, Jolter being engaged with his pupil, and all the people of the houſe ignorant of the only language he could ſpeak, he was compelled, with infinite reluctance, to addreſs himſelf to the doctor, who was at that time ſhut up in his own chamber. Having knocked at the door to no purpoſe, he peeped through they key-hole, and ſaw the phyſician ſitting at a table, with a pen in one hand, and a paper before him, his head reclined upon his other hand, and his eyes fixed upon the cieling, as if he had been entranced. Pallet, concluding that he was under the power of convulſion, endeavoured to force the door open; and the noiſe of his efforts recalled the doctor from his reverie. This poetical republican, being ſo diſagreeably diſturbed, ſtarted up in a paſſion, and opening the door, no ſooner perceived who had interrupted him, than he flung it in his face with great fury, and curſed him for his impertinent intruſion, which had deprived him of the moſt delightful

viſion

viſion that ever regaled the human fancy. He imagined (as he afterwards imparted to Peregrine) that as he enjoyed himſelf in walking through the flowery plain of Parnaſſus, he was met by a venerable ſage, whom, by a certain divine vivacity, that lightened from his eyes, he inſtantly knew to be the immortal Pindar. He was immediately ſtruck with reverence and awe, and proſtrated himſelf before the apparition, which taking him by the hand, lifted him gently from the ground; and, with words more ſweet than the honey of the Hybla bees, told him, that of all the moderns, he alone was viſited by that celeſtial impulſe by which he himſelf had been inſpired, when he produced his moſt applauded odes. So ſaying, he led him up to the ſacred hill, perſuaded him to drink a copious draught of the waters of the Hippocrene, and then preſented him to the harmonious Nine, who crowned his temples with a laurel wreath.

No wonder that he was enraged to find himſelf cut off from ſuch ſublime ſociety. He raved in Greek againſt the invader; who was ſo big with his own purpoſe, that, unmindful of the diſgrace he had ſuſtained, and diſregarding all the ſymptoms of the phyſician's diſpleaſure, he applied his mouth to the door, in an eager tone—'I'll hold you any wager,' ſaid he, 'that I gueſs the true cauſe of Mr. Pickle's impriſonment.' To this challenge he received no reply; and therefore repeated it, adding—'I ſuppoſe you imagine he was taken up for fighting a duel, or affronting a nobleman, or lying with ſome man's wife, or ſome ſuch matter; but, egad! you was never more miſtaken in your life; and I'll lay my Cleopatra againſt your Homer's head, that in four and twenty hours you ſhan't light on the true reaſon.'

The favourite of the muſes, exaſperated at this vexatious perſeverance of the painter, who he imagined had come to teaze and inſult him—'I would,' ſaid he, 'ſacrifice a cock to Æſculapius, were I aſſured that any perſon had been taken up for extirpating ſuch a trou-

bleſome

blesome Goth as you are from the face of the earth. As for your boasted Cleopatra, which you say was drawn from your own wife, I believe the copy has as much of the *to kalon* as the original. But, were it mine, it should be hung up in the temple of Cloacina, as the picture of that goddess; for any other apartment would be disgraced by its appearance.'—'Hark ye, Sir!' replied Pallet, enraged in his turn at the contemptuous mention of his darling performance, 'you may make as free with my wife as you think proper; but 'ware my works; those are the children of my fancy, conceived by the glowing imagination and formed by the art of my own hands; and you yourself are a Goth, and a Turk, and a Tartar, and an impudent pretending jackanapes, to treat with such disrespect a production which, in the opinion of all the connoisseurs of the age, will, when finished, be a master-piece in its kind, and do honour to human genius and skill. So I say, again and again, (and I care not though your friend *Playtor* heard me) that you have no more taste than a drayman's horse, and that those foolish notions of the ancients ought to be drubbed out of you with a good cudgel, that you might learn to treat men of parts with more veneration. Perhaps you may not always be in the company of one who will halloo for assistance, when you are on the brink of being chastised for your insolence, as I did, when you brought upon yourself the resentment of that Scot, who, by the Lord! would have paid you both scot and lot, as Falstaff says, if the French officer had not put him in arrest.'

The physician, to this declamation, which was conveyed through the key-hole, answered, that he (the painter) was a fellow so infinitely below his consideration, that his conscience upbraided him with no action of his life, except that of chusing such a wretch for his companion and fellow-traveller; that he had viewed his character through the medium of good-nature and compassion, which had prompted him to give Pallet an opportunity of acquiring some new ideas under his immediate

mediate inſtruction; but he had abuſed his goodneſs and condeſcenſion in ſuch a flagrant manner, that he was now determined to diſcard him entirely from his acquaintance, and deſired him, for the preſent, to take himſelf away, on pain of being kicked for his preſumption.

Pallet was too much incenſed to be intimidated by this threat, which he retorted with great virulence, defying him to come forth, that it might appear which of them was beſt ſkilled in that pedeſtrian exerciſe, which he immediately began to practiſe againſt the door with ſuch thundering application, as reached the ears of Pickle and his governor; who coming out into the paſſage, and ſeeing him thus employed, aſked him if he had forgot the chamber-pots of Aloſt, that he ventured to behave in ſuch a manner, as entitled him to a ſecond preſcription of the ſame nature.

The doctor underſtanding that there was a company at hand, opened the door in a twinkling; and ſpringing upon his antagoniſt, like a tiger, a fierce contention would have enſued, to the infinite ſatisfaction of our hero, had not Jolter, to the manifeſt peril of his own perſon, interpoſed, and partly by force, and partly by exhortations, put a ſtop to the engagement before it was fairly begun. After having demonſtrated the indecency of ſuch a vulgar rencounter between two fellow-citizens in a foreign land, he begged to know the cauſe of their diſſenſion, and offered his good offices towards an accommodation. Peregrine alſo, ſeeing the fray was finiſhed, expreſſed himſelf to the ſame purpoſe: and the painter, for obvious reaſons, declining an explanation, his antagoniſt told the youth what a mortifying interruption he had ſuffered by the impertinent intruſion of Pallet, and gave him a detail of the particulars of his viſion, as above recited. The arbiter owned, the provocation was not to be endured; and decreed, that the offender ſhould make ſome atonement for his tranſgreſſion. Upon which the painter obſerved, that howſoever he might have been diſpoſed

to make acknowledgments, if the phyſician had ſignified his diſpleaſure like a gentleman, the complainant had now forfeited all claim to any ſuch conceſſions, by the vulgar manner in which he had reviled him and his productions; obſerving, that if he (the painter) had been inclined to retort his ſlanderous inſinuations, the republican's own works would have afforded ample ſubject for his ridicule and cenſure.

After divers diſputes and repreſentations, peace was at length concluded, on condition that, for the future, the doctor ſhould never mention Cleopatra, unleſs he could ſay ſomething in her praiſe; and that Pallet, in conſideration of his having been the firſt aggreſſor, ſhould make a ſketch of the phyſician's viſion, to be engraved and prefixed to the next edition of his odes.

CHAP. XXVIII.

The Travellers depart for Antwerp, at which Place the Painter gives a Looſe to his Enthuſiaſm.

OUR adventurer, baffled in all his efforts to retrieve his loſt Amanda, yielded at length to the remonſtrances of his governor and fellow-travellers, who, out of pure complaiſance to him, had exceeded their intended ſtay by ſix days at leaſt; and a couple of poſtchaiſes, with three riding horſes, being hired, they departed from Bruſſels in the morning, dining at Mechlin, and arrived about eight in the evening at the venerable city of Antwerp. During this day's journey, Pallet was elevated to an uncommon flow of ſpirits, with the proſpect of ſeeing the birth-place of Rubens, for whom he profeſſed an enthuſiaſtick admiration. He ſwore, that the pleaſure he felt was equal to that of a Muſſulman, on the laſt day of his pilgrimage to Mecca; and that he already conſidered himſelf a native of Antwerp, being ſo intimately acquainted with their ſo juſtly boaſted citizen, from whom, at certain junctures, he could not help believing himſelf derived, becauſe his own pencil adopted the manner of that great man with ſurprizing facility, and his face wanted nothing but a pair of whiſkers and a beard to exhibit the

expreſs image of the Fleming's countenance. He told them he was ſo proud of this reſemblance, that, in order to render it more ſtriking, he had at one time of his life reſolved to keep his face ſacred from the razor; and in that purpoſe had perſevered, notwithſtanding the continual reprehenſions of Mrs. Pallet, who being then with child, ſaid, his aſpect was ſo hideous, that ſhe dreaded a miſcarriage every hour, until ſhe threatened, in plain terms, to diſpute the ſanity of his intellects, and apply to the chancellor for a committee.

The doctor, on this occaſion, obſerved, that a man who is not proof againſt the ſolicitations of a woman, can never expect to make a great figure in life; that painters and poets ought to cultivate no wives but the muſes; or if they are, by the accidents of fortune, encumbered with families, they ſhould carefully guard againſt that pernicious weakneſs, falſely honoured with the appellation of *natural affection*, and pay no manner of regard to the impertinent cuſtoms of the world. 'Granting that you had been, for a ſhort time, deemed a lunatic,' ſaid he, 'you might have acquitted yourſelf honourably of that imputation, by ſome performance that would have raiſed your character above all cenſure. Sophocles himſelf, that celebrated tragic poet, who, for the ſweetneſs of his verſification, was ſtiled *melitta*, or *the bee*, in his old age ſuffered the ſame accuſation from his own children, who ſeeing him neglect his family affairs, and devote himſelf entirely to poetry, carried him before the magiſtrate, as a man whoſe intellects were ſo much impaired by the infirmities of age, that he was no longer fit to manage his domeſtick concerns; upon which the reverend bard produced his tragedy of *Oidipous epi kolono*, as a work he had juſt finiſhed; which being peruſed, inſtead of being declared unſound of underſtanding, he was diſmiſſed with admiration and applauſe. I wiſh your beard and whiſkers had been ſanctioned by the like authority; though I am afraid you would have been in the predicament of thoſe diſciples of a certain philo-

ſopher,

ſopher, who drank decoctions of cummin ſeeds, that their faces might adopt the paleneſs of their maſter's complexion; hoping, that being as wan, they would be as learned as their teacher.' The painter, ſtung with this ſarcaſm, replied—'Or like thoſe virtuoſi, who, by repeating Greek, eating ſillikickaby, and pretending to ſee viſions, think they equal the ancients in taſte and genius.' The phyſician retorted, Pallet rejoined, and the altercation continued, until they entered the gates of Antwerp; when the admirer of Rubens broke forth into a rapturous exclamation, which put an end to the diſpute, and attracted the notice of the inhabitants, many of whom, by ſhrugging up their ſhoulders, and pointing to their foreheads, gave ſhrewd indications that they believed him a poor gentleman diſordered in his brain.

They had no ſooner alighted at the inn, than this pſeudo-enthuſiaſt propoſed to viſit the great church, in which he had been informed ſome of his maſter's pieces were to be ſeen; and was remarkably chagrined, when he underſtood that he could not be admitted till next day. He roſe next morning by day-break, and diſturbed his fellow-travellers in ſuch a noiſy and clamorous manner, that Peregrine determined to puniſh him with ſome new infliction; and while he put on his cloaths, actually formed the plan of promoting a duel between him and the doctor; in the management of which, he promiſed himſelf ſtore of entertainment, from the behaviour of both.

Being provided with one of thoſe domeſticks who are always in waiting to offer their ſervices to ſtrangers on their firſt arrival, they were conducted to the houſe of a gentleman who had an excellent collection of pictures; and though the greateſt part of them were painted by his favourite artiſt, Pallet condemned them all by the lump, becauſe Pickle had told him beforehand, that there was not one performance of Rubens among the number.

The next place they viſited, was what is called the

academy of painting, furniſhed with a number of paltry pieces, in which our painter recognized the ſtyle of Peter Paul, with many expreſſions of admiration; on the ſame ſort of previous intelligence.

From this repoſitory they went to the great church; and being lead to the tomb of Rubens, the whimſical painter fell upon his knees, and worſhipped, with ſuch appearance of devotion, that the attendant, ſcandalized at his ſuperſtition, pulled him up; obſerving, with great warmth, that the perſon buried in that place was no ſaint, but as great a ſinner as himſelf; and that if he was ſpiritually diſpoſed, there was a chapel of the Bleſſed Virgin, at the diſtance of three yards on the right-hand, to which he might retire. He thought it incumbent upon him to manifeſt ſome extraordinary inſpiration, while he reſided on the ſpot where Rubens was born; and therefore his whole behaviour was an affectation of rapture, expreſſed in diſtracted exclamations, convulſive ſtarts, and uncouth geſticulations. In the midſt of his frantick behaviour, he ſaw an old capuchin with a white beard mount the pulpit, and hold forth to the congregation with ſuch violence of emphaſis and geſture as captivated his fancy; and bawling aloud—'Zounds! what an excellent Paul preaching at Athens!' he pulled a pencil and a ſmall memorandum-book from his pocket, and began to take a ſketch of the orator, with great eagerneſs and agitation, ſaying—'Egad! friend Raphael, we ſhall ſee whether you or I have got the beſt knack of trumping up an apoſtle.' This appearance of diſreſpect gave offence to the audience, which began to murmur againſt this heretic libertine; when one of the prieſts belonging to the choir, in order to prevent any ill conſequence from their diſpleaſure, came and told him in the French language, that ſuch liberties were not permitted in their religion, and adviſed him to lay aſide his implements, leſt the people ſhould take umbrage at his deſign, and be provoked to puniſh him as a profane ſcoffer at their worſhip. The

The painter feeing himfelf addreffed by a friar, who, while he fpoke, bowed with great complaifance, imagined that he was a begging brother, come to fupplicate his charity; and his attention being quite engroffed by the defign he was making, he patted the prieft's fhaven crown with his hand, faying—'*Oter tems, oter tems*;' and then refumed his pencil with great earneftnefs. The ecclefiaftick perceiving that the ftranger did not comprehend his meaning, pulled him by the fleeve, and explained himfelf in the Latin tongue: upon which Pallet, provoked at this intrufion, curfed him aloud for an impudent beggarly fon of a whore; and taking out a fhilling, flung it upon the pavement, with manifeft figns of indignation.

Some of the common people, enraged to fee their religion contemned, and their priefts infulted at the very altar, rofe from their feats; and furrounding the aftonifhed painter, one of the number fnatched his book from his hand, and tore it into a thoufand pieces. Frightened as he was, he could not help crying—'Fire and faggots! all my favourite ideas are gone to wreck!' and was in danger of being very roughly handled by the crowd, had not Peregrine ftepped in, and affured them, that he was a poor unhappy gentleman, who laboured under a tranfport of the brain. Thofe who underftood the French language communicated this information to the reft, fo that he efcaped without any other chaftifement, than that of being obliged to retire. And as they could not fee the famous defcent from the crofs till after the fervice was finifhed, they were conducted by their domeftick to the houfe of a painter, where they found a beggar ftanding for his picture, and the artift actually employed in reprefenting a huge loufe that crawled upon his fhoulder. Pallet was wonderfully pleafed with this circumftance, which he faid was altogether a new thought, and an excellent hint, of which he would make his advantage: and in the courfe of his furvey of this Fleming's performances, perceiving a piece in which two flies were engaged up-

on the carcaſe of a dog half devoured, he ran to his brother bruſh, and ſwore he was worthy of being a fellow-citizen of the immortal Rubens. He then lamented, with many expreſſions of grief and reſentment, that he had loſt his common-place-book, in which he had preſerved a thouſand conceptions of the ſame ſort, formed by the accidental objects of his ſenſes and imagination; and took an opportunity of telling his fellow-travellers, that in execution he had equalled, if not excelled, the two ancient painters who vied with each other in the repreſentation of a curtain and a bunch of grapes; for he had exhibited the image of a certain object ſo like to nature, that the bare ſight of it ſet a whole hog-ſtye in an uproar.

When he had examined and applauded all the productions of this minute artiſt, they returned to the great church, and were entertained with the view of that celebrated maſter-piece of Rubens, in which he has introduced the portraits of himſelf and his whole family. The doors that conceal this capital performance were no ſooner unfolded, than our enthuſiaſt, debarred the uſe of ſpeech, by a previous covenant with his friend Pickle, lifted up his hands and eyes, and putting himſelf in the attitude of Hamlet, when his father's ghoſt appears, adored in ſilent extaſy and awe. He even made a merit of neceſſity; and when they had withdrawn from the place, proteſted that his whole faculties were ſwallowed up in love and admiration. He now profeſſed himſelf more than ever enamoured of the Flemiſh ſchool, raved in extravagant encomiums, and propoſed that the whole company ſhould pay homage to the memory of the divine Rubens, by repairing forthwith to the houſe in which he lived, and proſtrating themſelves on the floor of his painting-room.

As there was nothing remarkable in the tenement, which had been rebuilt more than once ſince the death of that great man, Peregrine excuſed himſelf from complying with the propoſal, on pretence of being fatigued with the circuit they had already performed.

Jolter

Jolter declined it for the ſame reaſon; and the queſtion being put to the doctor, he refuſed his company with an air of diſdain. Pallet, piqued at his contemptuous manner, aſked if he would not go and ſee the habitation of *Pindoor*, provided he was in the city where that poet lived; and when the phyſician obſerved that there was an infinite difference between the men—'That I'll allow,' replied the painter, 'for the devil a poet ever lived in Greece or Troy, that was worthy to clean the pencils of our beloved Rubens.' The phyſician could not with any degree of temper and forbearance hear this outrageous blaſphemy, for which, he ſaid, Pallet's eyes ought to be picked out by owls; and the diſpute aroſe, as uſual, to ſuch ſcurrilities of language and indecency of behaviour, that paſſengers began to take notice of their animoſity, and Peregrine was obliged to interpoſe for his own credit.

CHAP. XXIX.

Peregrine artfully foments a Quarrel between Pallet and the Phyſician, who fight a Duel on the Ramparts.

THE painter betook himſelf to the houſe of the Flemiſh Raphael, and the reſt of the company went back to their lodgings; where the young gentleman, taking the advantage of being alone with the phyſician, recapitulated all the affronts he had ſuſtained from the painter's petulance, aggravating every circumſtance of the diſgrace, and adviſing him, in the capacity of a friend, to take care of his honour, which could not fail to ſuffer in the opinion of the world, if he allowed himſelf to be inſulted with impunity, by one ſo much his inferior in every degree of conſideration.

The phyſician aſſured him, that Pallet had hitherto eſcaped chaſtiſement, by being deemed an object unworthy his reſentment, and in conſideration of the wretch's family, for which his compaſſion was intereſted; but that repeated injuries would inflame the moſt benevolent diſpoſition: and although he could find no precedent of duelling among the Greeks and

Romans,

Romans, whom he conſidered as the patterns of demeanour, Pallet ſhould no longer avail himſelf of his veneration for the ancients, but be puniſhed for the very next offence he ſhould commit.

Having thus ſpirited up the doctor to a reſolution from which he could not decently ſwerve, our adventurer acted the incendiary with the other party alſo; giving him to underſtand, that the phyſician treated his character with ſuch contempt, and behaved to him with ſuch inſolence, as no gentleman ought to bear: that for his own part, he was every day put out of countenance by their mutual animoſity, which appeared in nothing but vulgar expreſſions, more becoming ſhoe-boys and oyſter-women than men of honour and education; and therefore he ſhould be obliged, contrary to his inclination, to break off all correſpondence with them both, if they would not fall upon ſome method to retrieve the dignity of their characters.

Theſe repreſentations would have had little effect upon the timidity of the painter, who was likewiſe too much of a Grecian to approve of ſingle combat in any other way than that of boxing, an exerciſe in which he was well ſkilled, had not they been accompanied with an inſinuation, that his antagoniſt was no Hector, and that he might humble him into any conceſſion, without running the leaſt perſonal riſk. Animated by this aſſurance, our ſecond Rubens ſet the trumpet of defiance to his mouth; ſwore he valued not his life a ruſh, when his honour was concerned; and intreated Mr. Pickle to be the bearer of a challenge, which he would inſtantly commit to writing.

The miſchievous fomentor highly applauded this manifeſtation of courage, by which he was at liberty to cultivate his friendſhip and ſociety; but declined the office of carrying the billet, that his tenderneſs of Pallet's reputation might not be miſrepreſented into an officious deſire of promoting quarrels. At the ſame time he recommended Tom Pipes, not only as a very proper meſſenger on this occaſion, but alſo as a truſty ſecond

ſecond in the field. The magnanimous painter took his advice; and retiring to his chamber, penned a challenge in theſe terms.

'SIR,

'WHEN I am heartily provoked, I fear 'not the devil himſelf; much leſs——I will not call 'you a pedantick coxcomb, nor an unmannerly fellow, 'becauſe theſe are the hippythets of the vulgar: but, 'remember, ſuch as you are, I nyther love you nor 'fear you; but on the contrary, expect ſatisfaction for 'your audacious behaviour to me on divers occaſions; 'and will, this evening, in the twilight,, meet you on 'the ramparts with ſword and piſtol, where the Lord 'have mercy on the ſoul of one of us; for your body 'ſhall find no favour with your incenſed defier, till 'death,

LAYMAN PALLET.'

This reſolute defiance, after having been ſubmitted to the peruſal, and honoured with the approbation of our youth, was committed to the charge of Pipes; who according to his orders, delivered it in the afternoon; and brough for anſwer, that the phyſician would attend him at the appointed time and place.

The challenger was evidently diſcompoſed at the unexpected news of this acceptance, and ran about the houſe in great diſorder, in queſt of Peregrine, to beg his farther advice and aſſiſtance; but underſtanding that the youth was engaged in private with his adverſary, he began to ſuſpect ſome colluſion, and curſed himſelf for his folly and precipitation. He even entertained ſome thoughts of retracting his invitation, and ſubmitting to the triumph of his antagoniſt: but before he would ſtoop to this opprobrious condeſcenſion, he reſolved to try another expedient, which might be the means of ſaving both his character and perſon. In this hope he viſited Mr. Jolter, and very gravely deſired he would be ſo good as to undertake the office of his ſecond, in a duel which he was to fight that evening with the phyſician. The governor, inſtead of anſwering his expectation, in expreſſing fear and concern, and

breaking

breaking forth into exclamations of—'Good God! gentlemen, what d'ye mean? You ſhall not murder one another while it is in my power to prevent your purpoſe. I will go directly to the governor of the place, who ſhall interpoſe his authority.' I ſay, inſtead of theſe and other friendly menaces of prevention, Jolter heard the propoſal with the moſt phlegmatick tranquillity, and excuſed himſelf from accepting the honour he intended for him, on account of his character and ſituation, which would not permit him to be concerned in any ſuch rencounters. Indeed, this mortifying reception was owing to a previous hint from Peregrine; who, dreading ſome ſort of interruption from his governor, had made him acquainted with his deſign, and aſſured him that the affair would not be brought to any dangerous iſſue.

Thus diſappointed, the dejected challenger was overwhelmed with perplexity and diſmay; and in the terrors of death or mutilation, reſolved to deprecate the wrath of his enemy, and conform to any ſubmiſſion he ſhould propoſe; when he was accidentally encountered by our adventurer, who with demonſtrations of infinite ſatisfaction, told him in confidence, that his billet had thrown the doctor into an agony of conſternation; that the acceptance of his challenge was a mere effort of deſpair, calculated to confound the ferocity of the ſender, and diſpoſe him to liſten to terms of accommodation; that he had imparted the letter to him with fear and trembling, on pretence of engaging him as a ſecond, but in reality, with a view of obtaining his good offices in promoting a reconciliation: 'But, perceiving the ſituation of his mind,' added our hero, 'I thought it would be more for your honour to baffle his expectation, and therefore I readily undertook the taſk of attending him to the field, in full aſſurance, that he will there humble himſelf before you, even to proſtration. In this ſecurity, you may go and prepare your arms, and beſpeak the aſſiſtance of Pipes, who will ſquire you in the field, while I keep myſelf up, that our corre-

ſpondence

ſpondence may not be ſuſpected by the phyſician.' Pallet's ſpirits, that were ſunk to dejection, roſe at this encouragement to all the inſolence of triumph; he again declared his contempt of danger, and his piſtols being loaded and accommodated with new flints by his truſty armour bearer, waited, without flinching, for the hour of battle.

On the firſt approach of twilight, ſomebody knocked at his door, and Pipes having opened it at his deſire, he heard the voice of his antagoniſt pronounce— 'Tell Mr. Pallet, that I am going to the place of appointment.' The painter was not a little ſurprized at this anticipation, which ſo ill agreed with the information he had received from Pickle; and his concern beginning to recur, he fortified himſelf with a large bumper of brandy, which, however, did not overcome the anxiety of his thoughts. Nevertheleſs, he ſet out on the expedition with his ſecond, betwixt whom and himſelf the following dialogue paſſed in their way to the ramparts. 'Mr. Pipes,' ſaid the painter, with diſordered accent, 'methinks the doctor was in a peſtilent hurry with that meſſage of his.'—'Ey, ey,' anſwered Tom, 'I do ſuppoſe he longs to be foul of you.' —'What!' replied the other, 'd'ye think he thirſts after my blood?'—'To be ſure he does,' ſaid Pipes, thruſting a large quid of tobacco in his cheek, with great deliberation. 'If that be the caſe,' cried Pallet, beginning to ſhake, 'he is no better than a cannibal, and no Chriſtian ought to fight him on an equal footing.' Tom obſerving his emotion, eyed him with a frown of indignation, ſaying, 'You an't afraid, are you?'— 'God forbid!' replied the challenger, ſtammering with fear. 'What ſhould I be afraid of? The worſt he can do is to take my life, and then he'll be anſwerable both to God and man for the murder: don't you think he will?'—'I think no ſuch matter,' anſwered the ſecond; 'if ſo be as how he puts a brace of bullets through your bows, and kills you fairly, it is no more murder than if I was to bring down a noddy from the

main

main top-sail yard.' By this time Pallet's teeeth chattered with such violence, that he could scarce pronounce this reply—'Mr. Thomas, you seem to make very light of a man's life; but I trust in the Almighty, I shall not so easily be brought down. Sure many a man has fought a duel, without losing his life! Do you imagine that I run such hazard of falling by the hand of my adversary?'—'You may, or may not,' said the unconcerned Pipes, 'just as it happens. What then? Death is a debt that every man owes, according to the song; and if you set foot to foot, I think one of you must go to pot.'—'Foot to foot!' exclaimed the terrified painter, 'that's downright butchery; and I'll be damn'd before I fight any man on earth in such a barbarous way. What! d'ye take me to be a savage beast?' This declaration he made while they ascended the ramparts. His attendant perceiving the physician and his second at the distance of an hundred paces before them, gave him notice of their appearance, and advised him to make ready and behave like a man. Pallet in vain endeavoured to conceal his panick, which discovered itself in an universal trepidation of body; and the lamentable tone in which he answered this exhortation of Pipes, saying—'I do behave like a man; but you would have me act the part of a brute. Are they coming this way?' When Tom told him that they had faced about, and admonished him to advance, the nerves of his arm refused their office, he could not hold out his pistol, and instead of going forward, retreated with an insensibility of motion; till Pipes, placing himself in the rear, set his own back to that of his principal, and swore he should not budge an inch farther in that direction.

While the valet thus tutored the painter, his master enjoyed the terrors of the physician, which w[illegible] ridiculous than those of Pallet, because he w[illegible] upon disguising them. His declaration to Pe[illegible] the morning, would not suffer him to start any objections when he received the challenge; and findi[illegible]

th

that the young gentleman made no offer of mediating the affair, but rather congratulated him on the occaſion, when he communicated the painter's billet, all his efforts conſiſted in oblique hints and general reflections upon the abſurdity of duelling, which was firſt introduced among civilized nations by the barbarous Huns and Longobards. He likewiſe pretended to ridicule the uſe of fire-arms, which confounded all the diſtinctions of ſkill and addreſs, and deprived a combatant of the opportunity of ſignalizing his perſonal prowefs. Pickle aſſented to the juſtneſs of his obſervations; but at the ſame time repreſented the neceſſity of complying with the cuſtoms of the world, (ridiculous as they were) on which a man's honour and reputation depend. So that, ſeeing no hopes of profiting by that artifice, the republican's agitation became more and more remarkable; and he propoſed in plain terms, that they ſhould contend in armour, like the combatants of ancient days; for it was but reaſonable, that they ſhould practiſe the manner of fighting, ce they adopted the diſpoſition of thoſe iron times.

Nothing could have afforded more diverſion to our o, than the ſight of two ſuch duelliſts caſed in iron; d he wiſhed that he had promoted the quarrel at uſſels, where he could have hired the armour of harles the Fifth, and the valiant Duke of Parma, for neir accommodation: but as there was no poſſibility of furniſhing the cap-a-pee at Antwerp, he perſuaded him to conform to the modern uſe of the ſword, and meet the painter on his own terms; and ſuſpecting that his fear would ſupply him with other excuſes for declining the combat, he comforted him with ſome diſtant inſinuations, to the prejudice of his adverſary's courage, which would in all probability evaporate before y miſchief could happen.

ithſtanding this encouragement, he could not eis the reluctance with which he went to the field, id caſt many a wiſtful look over his left ſhoulder, to e whether or not his adverſary was at his heels.

When by the advice of his fecond, he took poffeffion of the ground, and turned about with his face to the enemy, it was not fo dark, but that Peregrine could perceive the unufual palenefs of his countenance, and the fweat ftanding in large drops upon his forehead; nay, there was a manifeft diforder in his fpeech, when he regretted the want of the Pila and Parma, with which he would have made a rattling noife, to aftonifh his foe, in fpringing forward; and finging the hymn to battle, in the manner of the ancients.

In the mean time, obferving the hefitation of his antagonift, who, far from advancing, feemed to recoil, and even ftruggle with his fecond, he gueffed the fituation of the painter's thoughts; and collecting all the manhood that he poffeffed, feized the opportunity of profiting by his enemy's confternation. Striking his fword and piftol together, he advanced in a fort of trot, raifing a loud howl, in which he repeated, in lieu of the Spartan fong, part of the ftrophe from one of Pindar's Pythia, beginning with *Ek theon gor makanai, pafai Broteais aretais*, &c. This imitation of the Greeks had all the defired effect upon the painter, who feeing the phyfician running towards him like a fury, with a piftol in his right-hand, which was extended, and hearing the dreadful yell he uttered, and the outlandifh words he pronounced, was feized with an univerfal palfy of his limbs. He would have dropped down upon the ground, had not Pipes fupported and encouraged him to ftand upon his defence. The doctor, contrary to his expectation, finding that he had not flinched from the fpot, though he had now performed one half of his career, put in practice his laft effort, by firing his piftol; the noife of which no fooner reached the ears of the affrighted painter, than he recommended his foul to God, and roared for mercy with great vociferation. The republican, overjoyed at this exclamation, commanded him to yield, and furrender his arms, on pain of immediate death: upon which he threw away his piftols and fword, in fpite of all the admoni-

tions

tions and even threats of his second, who left him to his fate, and went up to his master, stopping his nose with signs of loathing and abhorrence.

The victor having won the *Spolia Opima*, granted him his life on condition, that he would on his knees supplicate his pardon, acknowledge himself inferior to his conqueror in every virtue and qualification, and promise for the future to merit his favour by submission and respect. These insolent terms were readily embraced by the unfortunate challenger; who fairly owned, that he was not at all calculated for the purposes of war, and that henceforth he would contend with no weapon but his pencil. He begged with great humility, that Mr. Pickle would not think the worse of his morals for this defect of courage, which was a natural infirmity inherited from his father, and suspend his opinion of his talents, until he should have an opportunity of contemplating the charms of his Cleopatra, which would be finished in less than three months.

Our hero observed, with an affected air of displeasure, that no man could be justly condemned for being subject to the impressions of fear; and therefore his cowardice might easily be forgiven: but there was something so presumptuous, dishonest, and disingenuous, in arrogating a quality to which he knew he had not the smallest pretension, that he could not forget his misbehaviour all at once, though he would condescend to communicate with him as formerly, in hopes of seeing a reformation in his conduct. Pallet protested, that there was no dissimulation in the case; for he was ignorant of his own weakness, until his resolution was put to the trial: he faithfully promised to demean himself, during the remaining part of the tour, with that conscious modesty and penitence which became a person in his condition; and, for the present, implored the assistance of Mr. Pipes, in disembarrassing him from the disagreeable consequence of his fear.

CHAP. XXX.

The Doctor exults in his Victory. They set out for Rotterdam, where they are entertained by two Dutch Gentlemen in a Yacht, which is overturned in the Maeze, to the manifest Hazard of the Painter's Life. They spend the Evening with their Entertainers, and next Day visit a Cabinet of Curiosities.

TOM was accordingly ordered to minister to his occasions; and the conqueror, elated with his success, which he in a great measure attributed to his manner of attack, and the hymn which he howled, told Peregrine, that he was now convinced of the truth of what Pindar sung in these words, *Ossa de me pephileke Zeus, atuzontai Boan Pieridon aionta*; for he had no sooner begun to repeat the mellifluent strains of that divine poet, than the wretch his antagonist was confounded, and his nerves unstrung.

On their return to the inn, he expatiated on the prudence and tranquillity of his own behaviour, and ascribed the consternation of Pallet to the remembrance of some crime that lay heavy upon his conscience: for, in his opinion, a man of virtue and common sense could not possibly be afraid of death, which is not only the peaceful ha.bour that receives him shattered on the tempestuous sea of life, but also the eternal seal of his fame and glory, which it is no longer in his power to forfeit and forego. He lamented his fate, in being doomed to live in such degenerate days, when war is become a mercenary trade; and ardently wished, that the day would come, when he should have such an opportunity of signalizing his courage in the cause of liberty, as that of Marathon, where an handful of Athenians, fighting for their freedom, defeated the whole strength of the Persian empire. 'Would to Heaven!' said he, 'my muse were blessed with an occasion to emulate that glorious testimony on the trophy in Cyprus, erected by Cimon, for two great victories gained on the same day over the Persians by sea and land; in which

which it is very remarkable, that the greatneſs of the occaſion has raiſed the manner of expreſſion above the uſual ſimplicity and modeſty of all other ancient inſcriptions.' He then repeated it with all the pomp of declamation, and ſignified his hope, that the French would one day invade us with ſuch an army as that which Xerxes led into Greece, that it might be in his power to devote himſelf, like Leonidas, to the freedom of his country.

The memorable combat being thus determined, and every thing that was remarkable in Antwerp ſurveyed, they ſent their baggage down the Scheld to Rotterdam, and ſet out for the ſame place in a poſt-waggon, which that ſame evening brought them in ſafety to the banks of the Maeze. They put up at an Engliſh houſe of entertainment, remarkable for the modeſty and moderation of the landlord; and next morning the doctor went in perſon, to deliver letters of recommendation to two Dutch gentlemen, from one of his acquaintance at Paris. Neither of them happened to be at home when he called; ſo that he left a meſſage at their lodgings, with his addreſs; and in the afternoon they waited upon the company, and after many hoſpitable profeſſions, one of the two invited them to ſpend the evening at his houſe.

Meanwhile they had provided a pleaſure-yacht, in which they propoſed to treat them with an excurſion upon the Maeze. This being almoſt the only diverſion that place affords, our young gentleman reliſhed the propoſal; and notwithſtanding the remonſtrances of Mr. Jolter, who declined the voyage on account of the roughneſs of the weather, they went on board without heſitation, and found a collation prepared in the cabbin. While they tacked to and fro in the river, under the impulſe of a mackarel breeze, the phyſician expreſſed his ſatisfaction, and Pallet was raviſhed with the entertainment. But the wind increaſing, to the unſpeakable joy of the Dutchmen, who had now an opportunity of ſhewing their dexterity in the management of

the veſſel, the gueſts found it inconvenient to ſtand upon deck, and impoſſible to ſit below, on account of the clouds of tobacco-ſmoke which rolled from the pipes of their entertainers, in ſuch volumes as annoyed them even to the hazard of ſuffocation. This fumigation, together with the extraordinary motion of the ſhip, began to affect the head and ſtomach of the painter, who begged earneſtly to be ſet on ſhore: but the Dutch gentlemen, who had no idea of his ſufferings, inſiſted, with ſurprizing obſtinacy of regard, upon his ſtaying until he ſhould ſee an inſtance of the ſkill of their mariners; and bringing him on deck, commanded the men to carry the veſſel's lee gun-wale under water. This nicety of navigation they inſtantly performed, to the admiration of Pickle, the diſcompoſure of the doctor, and terror of Pallet, who bleſſed himſelf from the courteſy of a Dutchman, and prayed to Heaven for his deliverance. While the Hollanders enjoyed the reputation of this feat, and the diſtreſs of the painter at the ſame time, the yacht was overtaken by a ſudden ſquall, that overſet her in a moment, and flung every man overboard into the Maeze, before they could have the leaſt warning of their fate, much leſs, time to provide againſt the accident. Peregrine, who was an expert ſwimmer, reached the ſhore in ſafety; the phyſician, in the agonies of deſpair, laid faſt hold on the trunk-breeches of one of the men, who dragged him to the other ſide; the entertainers landed at the bomb-keys, ſmoking their pipes all the way with great deliberation; and the poor painter muſt have gone to the bottom, had not he been encountered by the cable of a ſhip, that lay at anchor near the ſcene of their diſaſter. Though his ſenſes had forſaken him, his hands faſtened by inſtinct on this providential occurrence, which he held with ſuch a convulſive graſp, that when a boat was ſent out to bring him on ſhore, it was with the utmoſt difficulty that his fingers were diſengaged. He was carried into a houſe, deprived of the uſe of ſpeech, and bereft of all ſenſation; and being ſuſpended by the heels,

heels, a vaſt quantity of water ran out of his mouth. This evacuation being made, he began to utter dreadful groans, which gradually increaſed to a continued roar; and after he had regained the uſe of his ſenſes, he underwent a delirium that laſted ſeveral hours. As for the treaters, they never dreamed of expreſſing the leaſt concern to Pickle or the phyſician for what had happened, becauſe it was an accident ſo common as to paſs without notice.

Leaving the care of the veſſel to the ſeamen, the company retired to their reſpective lodgings, in order to ſhift their cloaths; and in the evening our travellers were conducted to the houſe of their new friend; who, with a view of making his invitation the more agreeable, had aſſembled to the number of twenty or thirty Engliſhmen, of all ranks and degrees, from the merchant to the periwig-maker's apprentice.

In the midſt of this congregation ſtood a chafing-diſh with live coals, for the convenience of lighting their pipes, and every individual was accommodated with a ſpitting-box. There was not a mouth in the apartment unfurniſhed with a tube, ſo that they reſembled a convocation of chimeras breathing fire and ſmoak; and our gentlemen were fain to imitate their example in their own defence. It is not to be ſuppoſed that the converſation was either very ſprightly or polite; the whole entertainment was of the Dutch caſt, frowzy and phlegmatick: and our adventurer, as he returned to his lodging, tortured with the head-ach, and diſguſted with every circumſtance of his treatment, curſed the hour in which the doctor had ſaddled them with ſuch troubleſome companions.

Next morning by eight o'clock theſe polite Hollanders returned the viſit, and after breakfaſt, attended their Engliſh friends to the houſe of a perſon that poſſeſſed a very curious cabinet of curioſities, to which they had ſecured our company's admiſſion. The owner of this collection was a cheeſemonger, who received them in a woollen night-cap, with ſtraps buttoned under

der his chin. As he underſtood no language but his own, he told them, by the canal of one of their conductors, that he did not make a practice of ſhewing his curioſities; but underſtanding that they were Engliſhmen, and recommended to his friends, he was content to ſubmit them to their peruſal. So ſaying, he led them up a dark ſtair-caſe, into a ſmall room, decorated with a few paltry figures in plaiſter of Paris, two or three miſerable landſcapes, the ſkins of an otter, ſeal, and ſome fiſhes ſtuffed; and in one corner ſtood a glaſs-caſe, furniſhed with newts, frogs, lizards, and ſerpents, preſerved in ſpirits; a human fœtus, a calf with two heads, and about two dozen of butterflies pinned upon paper. The virtuoſo having exhibited theſe particulars, eyed the ſtrangers with a look ſoliciting admiration and applauſe; and as he could not perceive any ſymptom of either in their geſtures or countenances, withdrew a curtain, and diſplayed a wainſcot cheſt of drawers, in which he gave them to underſtand was ſomething that would agreeably amuſe the imagination. Our travellers, regaled with this notice, imagined that they would be entertained with the ſight of ſome curious medals, or other productions of antiquity; but how were they diſappointed, when they ſaw nothing but a variety of ſhells, diſpoſed in whimſical figures, in each drawer. After he had detained them full two hours with a tedious commentary upon the ſhape, ſize, and colour of each department, he, with a ſupercilious ſimper, deſired that the Engliſh gentlemen would frankly and candidly declare whether his cabinet, or that of Mynheer Sloane, at London, was the moſt valuable. When this requeſt was ſignified in Engliſh to the company, the painter inſtantly exclaimed, 'By the Lard! they are not to be named of a day. And as for that matter, I would not give one corner of Saltero's coffee-houſe, at Chelſea, for all the traſh he hath ſhewn.' Peregrine, unwilling to mortify any perſon who had done his endeavour to pleaſe him, obſerved, that what he had ſeen was very curious and enter-

entertaining; but that no private collection in Europe was equal to that of Sir Hans Sloane, which, exclusive of presents, had cost an hundred thousand pounds. The two conductors were confounded at this asseveration, which being communicated to the cheesemonger, he shook his head with a significant grin; and though he did not chuse to express his incredulity in words, gave our hero to understand, that he did not much depend upon his veracity.

From the house of this Dutch naturalist, they were dragged all round the city, by the painful civility of their attendants, who did not quit them till the evening was well advanced, and then not till after they had promised to be with them before ten o'clock next day, in order to conduct them to a country-house, situated in a pleasant village on the other side of the river.

Pickle was already so much fatigued with their hospitality, that, for the first time of his life, he suffered a dejection of spirits; and resolved, at any rate, to avoid the threatened persecution of to-morrow. With this view he ordered his servants to pack up some cloaths and linen in a portmanteau; and in the morning embarked with his governor, in the treck skuyt, for the Hague, whither he pretended to be called by some urgent occasion, leaving his fellow-travellers to make his apology to their friends; and assuring them, that he would not proceed for Amsterdam without their society. He arrived at the Hague in the forenoon, and dined at an ordinary frequented by officers and people of fashion; where being informed, that the princess would see company in the evening, he dressed himself in a rich suit of the Parisian cut, and went to court without any introduction. A person of his appearance could not fail to attract the notice of such a small circle. The prince himself, understanding he was an Englishman and a stranger, went up to him without ceremony, and having welcomed him to the place, conversed with him for some minutes on the common topicks of discourse.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXI.

They proceed to the Hague; from whence they depart for Amsterdam, where they see a Dutch Tragedy, visit the Musick-house, in which Peregrine quarrels with the Captain of a Man of War. They pass through Haerlem, in their Way to Leyden. Return to Rotterdam, where the Company separates, and our Hero, with his Attendants, arrives in Safety at Harwich.

BEING joined by their fellow-travellers, in the morning, they made a tour to all the remarkable places in this celebrated village; saw the Foundery, the Stadthouse, the Spinhuys, Vauxhall, and Count Bentinck's gardens, and in the evening went to the French comedy, which was directed by a noted harlequin, who had found means to flatter the Dutch taste so effectually, that they extolled him as the greatest actor that ever appeared in the province of Holland. This famous company did not represent regular theatrical pieces, but only a sort of impromtus, in which this noted player always performed the greatest part of the entertainment. Among other sallies of wit that escaped him, there was one circumstance so remarkably adapted to the disposition and genius of his audience, that it were pity to pass it over in silence. A windmill being exhibited on the scene, harlequin, after having surveyed it with curiosity and admiration, asks of one of the millers the use of that machine; and being told, that it was a windmill, observes with some concern, that as there was not the least breath of wind, he could not have the pleasure of seeing it turn round. Urged by this consideration, he puts himself into the attitude of a person wrapped in profound meditation; and having continued a few seconds in this posture, runs to the miller with great eagerness and joy, and telling him that he had found an expedient to make his mill work, very fairly unbuttons his breeches; then presenting his posteriors to the sails of the machine, certain explosions are immediately heard, and the arms of the mill begin

to turn round, to the infinite ſatisfaction of the ſpectators, who approve the joke with loud peals of applauſe.

Our travellers ſtaid a few days at the Hague, during which the young gentleman waited on the Britiſh ambaſſador, to whom he was recommended by his excellency at Paris, and loſt about thirty guineas at billiards to a French adventurer, who decoyed him into the ſnare by keeping up his game. Then they departed in a poſt-waggon for Amſterdam, being provided with letters of introduction to an Engliſh merchant reſiding in that city, under whoſe auſpices they viſited every thing worth ſeeing, and among other excurſions went to ſee a Dutch tragedy acted; an entertainment which, of all others, had the ſtrangeſt effect upon the organs of our hero; the dreſs of their chief perſonages was ſo antick, their manner ſo aukwardly abſurd, and their language ſo ridiculouſly unfit for conveying the ſentiments of love and honour, that Peregrine's nerves were diuretically affected with the complicated abſurdity, and he was compelled to withdraw twenty times before the cataſtrophe of the piece.

The ſubject of this performance was the famous ſtory of Scipio's continence and virtue, in reſtoring the fair captive to her lover. The young Roman hero was repreſented by a broad-faced Batavian, in a burgomaſter's gown, and a fur-cap, ſitting ſmoaking his pipe at a table furniſhed with a cann of beer, a drinking-glaſs, and a plate of tobacco: the lady was ſuch a perſon as Scipio might very well be ſuppoſed to give away, without any great effort of generoſity; and indeed the Celtiberian prince ſeemed to be of that opinion; for, upon receiving her from the hand of the victor, he diſcovered none of thoſe tranſports of gratitude and joy which Livy deſcribes in recounting this event. The Dutch Scipio, however, was complaiſant enough in his way; for he deſired her to ſit at his right-hand, by the appellation of *Ya frow*, and with his own fingers filling a clean pipe, preſented it to Mynheer Allucio the lover. The reſt of the œconomy of the piece was in the

ſame

fame tafte; which was fo agreeable to the audience, that they feemed to have fhaken off their natural phlegm, in order to applaud the performance.

From the play our company adjourned to the houfe of their friend, where they fpent the evening; and the converfation turning upon poetry, a Dutchman who was prefent, and underftood the Englifh language, having liftened very attentively to the difcourfe, lifted up with both hands the greateft part of a Chefhire-cheefe that lay upon the table, faying, 'I do know vat is boetrie. Mine brotre be a great boet, and ave vrought a book as dick as all dat.' Pickle, diverted with this method of eftimating an author according to the quantity of his works, enquired about the fubjects of this bard's writings, but of thefe his brother could give no account, or other information, but that there was little market for the commodity, which hung heavy upon his hands, and induced him to wifh he had applied himfelf to another trade.

The only remarkable fcene in Amfterdam, which our company had not feen, was the Spuyl, or mufick-houfes, which, by the connivance of the magiftrates, are maintained for the recreation of thofe who might attempt the chaftity of creditable women, if they were not provided with fuch conveniencies. To one of thefe night-houfes did our travellers repair, under the conduct of the Englifh merchant, and were introduced into fuch another place as the ever memorable coffee-houfe of Moll King; with this difference, that the company here were not fo riotous as the bucks of Covent-Garden, but formed themfelves into a circle, within which fome of the number danced to the mufick of a fcurvy organ, and a few other inftruments that uttered tunes very fuitable to the difpofition of the hearers, while the whole apartment was fhrouded with clouds of fmoak impervious to the view. When our gentlemen entered, the floor was occupied by two females and their gallants, who, in the performance of their exercife, lifted their legs like fo many oxen at plough; and the

pipe

pipe of one of thoſe hoppers happening to be exhauſted, in the midſt of his ſaraband, he very deliberately drew forth his tobacco-box, filling and lighting it again, without any interruption to the dance. Peregrine being unchecked by the preſence of his governor, who was too tender of his own reputation to attend them in this expedition, made up to a ſprightly French girl that ſat in ſeeming expectation of a cuſtomer, and prevailing upon her to be his partner, led her into the circle, and, in his turn, took the opportunity of dancing a minuet, to the admiration of all preſent. He intended to have exhibited another ſpecimen of his ability in this art, when a captain of a Dutch man of war chancing to come in, and ſeeing a ſtranger engaged with the lady whom, it ſeems, he had beſpoke for his bed-fellow, he advanced without any ceremony, and ſeizing her by the arm, pulled her to the other ſide of the room. Our adventurer, who was not a man to put up with ſuch a brutal affront, followed the raviſher with indignation in his eyes; and puſhing him on one ſide, retook the ſubject of their conteſt, and led her back to the place from whence ſhe had been dragged. The Dutchman, enraged at the youth's preſumption, obeyed the firſt dictates of his choler, and lent his rival a hearty box on the ear; which was immediately repaid with intereſt, before our hero could recollect himſelf ſufficiently to lay his hand upon his ſword, and beckon the aggreſſor to the door.

Notwithſtanding the confuſion and diſorder which this affair produced in the room, and the endeavours of Pickle's company, who interpoſed, in order to prevent bloodſhed, the antagoniſts reached the ſtreet; and Peregrine drawing, was ſurprized to ſee the captain advance againſt him with a long knife, which he preferred to the ſword that hung by his ſide. The youth, confounded at this prepoſterous behaviour, deſired him, in the French tongue, to lay aſide that vulgar implement, and approach like a gentleman: but the Hollander, who neither underſtood the propoſal, nor would

have complied with his demand had he been made acquainted with his meaning, ruſhed forward like a deſperado, before his adverſary could put himſelf on his guard; and if the young gentleman had not been endued with ſurprizing agility, his noſe would have fallen a ſacrifice to the fury of the aſſailant. Finding himſelf in ſuch imminent jeopardy, he leaped to one ſide, and the Dutchman paſſing him, in the force of his career, he with one nimble kick made ſuch application to his enemy's heels, that he flew like lightning into the canal, where he had almoſt periſhed by pitching upon one of the poſts with which it was faced.

Peregrine having performed this exploit, did not ſtay for the captain's coming on ſhore, but retreated with all diſpatch, by the advice of his conductor; and next day embarked, with his companions, in the ſkuyt, for Haerlem, where they dined, and in the evening arrived at the ancient city of Leyden, where they met with ſome Engliſh ſtudents, who treated them with great hoſpitality. Not but that the harmony of the converſation was that ſame night interrupted by a diſpute that aroſe between one of thoſe young gentlemen and the phyſician, about the cold and hot methods of preſcription in the gout and rheumatiſm; and proceeded to ſuch a degree of mutual reviling, that Pickle, aſhamed and incenſed at his fellow-traveller's want of urbanity, eſpouſed the other's cauſe, and openly rebuked him for his unmannerly petulance, which (he ſaid) rendered him unfit for the purpoſes, and unworthy of the benefit of ſociety. This unexpected declaration overwhelmed the doctor with amazement and confuſion; he was inſtantaneouſly deprived of his ſpeech, and during the remaining part of the *partie*, ſat in ſilent mortification. In all probability he deliberated with himſelf, whether or not he ſhould expoſtulate with the young gentleman on the freedom he had taken with his character in a company of ſtrangers; but as he knew he had not a Pallet to deal with, he very prudently ſuppreſſed that ſuggeſtion, and in ſecret chewed the cud of reſentment.

After

After they had visited the physick garden, the university, the anatomical hall, and every other thing that was recommended to their view, they returned to Rotterdam, and held a consultation upon the method of transporting themselves to England. The doctor, whose grudge against Peregrine was rather inflamed than allayed by our hero's indifference and neglect, had tampered with the simplicity of the painter, who was proud of his advances towards a perfect reconciliation; and now took the opportunity of parting with our adventurer, by declaring that he and his friend Mr. Pallet were resolved to take their passage in a trading sloop, after he had heard Peregrine object against that tedious, disagreeable, and uncertain method of conveyance. Pickle immediately saw his intention; and, without using the least argument to dissuade them from their design, or expressing the smallest degree of concern at their separation, very coolly wished them a prosperous voyage, and ordered his baggage to be sent to Helvoetsluys. There he himself, and his retinue, went on board of the packet next day, and by the favour of a fair wind, in eighteen hours arrived at Harwich.

CHAP. XXXII.

Peregrine delivers his Letters of Recommendation at London, and returns to the Garrison, to the unspeakable Joy of the Commodore and his whole Family.

NOW that our hero found himself on English ground, his heart dilated with the proud recollection of his own improvement since he left his native soil. He began to recognize the interesting ideas of his tender years; he enjoyed, by anticipation, the pleasure of seeing his friends in the garrison, after an absence of eighteen months; and the image of his charming Emily, which other less worthy considerations had depressed, resumed the full possession of his breast. He remembered, with shame, that he had neglected the correspondence with her brother, which he himself had solicited, and in consequence of which he had received a letter from that young gentleman while he lived at

Paris. In ſpite of theſe conſcientious reflections, he was too ſelf-ſufficient to think he ſhould find any difficulty in obtaining forgiveneſs for ſuch ſins of omiſſion; and began to imagine, that his paſſion would be prejudicial to the dignity of his ſituation, if it could not be gratified upon terms which formerly his imagination durſt not conceive.

Sorry I am, that the taſk I have undertaken, lays me under the neceſſity of divulging this degeneracy in the ſentiments of our imperious youth, who was now in the heyday of his blood, fluſhed with the conſciouſneſs of his own qualifications, vain of his fortune, and elated on the wings of imaginary expectation. Though he was deeply enamoured of Miſs Gauntlet, he was far from propoſing her heart as the ultimate aim of his gallantry, which (he did not doubt) would triumph over the moſt illuſtrious females of the land, and at once regale his appetite and ambition.

Meanwhile, being willing to make his appearance at the garriſon equally ſurprizing and agreeable, he cautioned Mr. Jolter againſt writing to the commodore, who had not heard of them ſince their departure from Paris, and hired a poſt-chaiſe and horſes for London. The governor going out to give orders about the carriage, inadvertently left a paper book open upon the table; and his pupil caſting his eyes upon the page, chanced to read theſe words. 'Sept. 15. Arrived in ſafety, by the bleſſing of God, in this unhappy kingdom of England. And thus concludes the journal of my laſt peregrination.' Peregrine's curioſity being enflamed by this extraordinary concluſion, he turned to the beginning, and peruſed ſeveral ſheets of a diary, ſuch as is commonly kept by that claſs of people known by the denomination of travelling governors, for the ſatisfaction of themſelves and the parents or guardians of their pupils, and for the edification and entertainment of their friends.

That the reader may have a clear idea of Mr. Jolter's performance, we ſhall tranſcribe the tranſactions of

of one day, as he had recorded them; and that abſtract will be a ſufficient ſpecimen of the whole plan and execution of the work.

'May 3. At eight o'clock ſet out from Boulogne in a poſt-chaiſe: the morning hazy and cold. Fortified my ſtomach with a cordial. Recommended ditto to Mr. P. as an antidote againſt the fog. Mem. He refuſed it. The hither horſe greaſed in the off-paſtern of the hind-leg. Arrive at Samers. Mem. This laſt was a poſt and a half, i. e. three leagues, or nine Engliſh miles. The day clears up. A fine champaign country, well ſtored with corn. The poſtillion ſays his prayers in paſſing by a wooden crucifix upon the road. Mem. The horſes ſtaled in a ſmall brook that runs in a bottom betwixt two hills. Arrive at Cormont. A common poſt. A diſpute with my pupil, who is obſtinate, and ſwayed by an unlucky prejudice. Proceed to Montreuil, where we dine on choice pigeons. A very moderate charge. No chamber-pot in the room, owing to the negligence of the maid. This is an ordinary poſt. Set out again for Nampont. Troubled with flatulencies and indigeſtion. Mr. P. is ſullen, and ſeems to miſtake an eructation for the breaking of wind backwards. From Nampont depart for Bernay, at which place we arrive in the evening, and propoſe to ſtay all night. N. B. The two laſt are double poſts, and our cattle very willing, though not ſtrong. Sup on a delicate ragout and excellent partridges, in company with Mr. H. and his ſpouſe. Mem. The ſaid H. trod upon my corn by miſtake. Diſcharge the bill, which is not very reaſonable. Diſpute with Mr. P. about giving money to the ſervant: he inſiſts upon my giving a twenty-four ſol piece; which is too much by two thirds, in all conſcience. N. B. She was a pert baggage, and did not deſerve a liard.'

Our hero was ſo much diſobliged with certain circumſtances of this amuſing and inſtructing journal, that, by way of puniſhing the author, he interlined theſe words betwixt two paragraphs, in a manner that

exactly resembled the tutor's hand-writing: 'Mem. Had the pleasure of drinking myself into a sweet intoxication, by toasting our lawful king, and his royal family, among some worthy English fathers of the society of Jesus.'

Having taken this revenge, he set out for London, where he waited upon those noblemen to whom he had letters of recommendation from Paris; and was not only graciously received, but even loaded with caresses and proffers of service, because they understood he was a young gentleman of fortune, who, far from standing in need of their countenance or assistance, would make an useful and creditable addition to the number of their adherents. He had the honour of dining at their tables, in consequence of pressing invitations, and of spending several evenings with the ladies, to whom he was particularly agreeable, on account of his person, address, and bleeding freely at play.

Being thus initiated in the beau monde, he thought it was high time to pay his respects to his generous benefactor the commodore; and accordingly departed one morning, with his train, for the garrison, at which he arrived in safety the same night. When he entered the gate, which was opened by a new servant that did not know him, he found his old friend Hatchway stalking in the yard, with a night-cap on his head, and a pipe in his mouth; and advancing to him, took him by the hand before he had any intimation of his approach. The lieutenant, thus saluted by a stranger, stared at him in silent astonishment, till he recollected his features, which were no sooner known, than dashing the pipe upon the pavement, he exclaimed, 'Smite my cross-trees! th'art welcome to port!' and hugged him in his arms with great affection. He then, by a cordial squeeze, expressed his satisfaction at seeing his old ship-mate Tom, who applying his whistle to his mouth, the whole castle echoed with his performance.

The servants hearing the well-known sound, poured out in a tumult of joy; and understanding that their

young mafter was returned, raifed fuch a peal of acclamation, as aftonifhed the commodore and his lady, and infpired Julia with fuch an interefting prefage, that her heart began to throb with violence. Running out in the hurry and perturbation of her hope, fhe was fo much overwhelmed at fight of her brother, that fhe actually fainted in his arms. But from this trance fhe foon awaked; and Peregrine having teftified his pleafure and affection, went up ftairs, and prefented himfelf before his godfather and aunt. Mrs. Trunnion rofe and received him with a gracious embrace, bleffing God for his happy return from a land of impiety and vice, in which fhe hoped his morals had not been corrupted, nor his principles of religion altered or impaired. The old gentleman being confined to his chair, was ftruck dumb with pleafure at his appearance; and having made divers ineffectual efforts to get up, at length difcharged a volley of curfes againft his own limbs, and held out his hand to his godfon, who kiffed it with great refpect.

After he had finifhed his apoftrophe to the gout, which was the daily and hourly fubject of his execrations, 'Well, my lad,' faid he, 'I care not how foon I go to bottom, now I behold thee fafe in harbour again: and yet, I tell a damn'd lie; I would I could keep afloat, until I fhould fee a lufty boy of thy begetting. Odds my timbers! I love thee fo well, that I believe thou art the fpawn of my own body; though I can give no acccount of thy being put upon the ftocks.' Then turning his eye upon Pipes, who by this time had penetrated into his apartment, and addreffed him with the ufual falutation of, 'What cheer?'—'Ahey!' cried he, 'are you there, you herring-faced fon of a fea-calf? What a flippery trick you played your old commander! But come, you dog, there's my fift; I forgive you, for the love you bear to my godfon. Go man your tackle, and hoift a cafk of ftrong-beer into the yard, knock out the bung, and put a pump in it, for the ufe of all my fervants and neighbours: and, d'ye hear! let the pere-

reroes be fired, and the garrifon illuminated, as rejoicings for the fafe arrival of your mafter. By the Lord! if I had the ufe of thefe damn'd fhambling fhanks, I would dance a hornpipe with the beft of you.'

The next object of his attention was Mr. Jolter, who was honoured with particular marks of diftinction, and the repeated promife of enjoying the living in his gift, as an acknowledgment of the care and difcretion with which he had fuperintended the education and morals of our hero. The governor was fo affected by the generofity of his patron, that the tears ran down his cheeks, while he expreffed his gratitude, and the infinite fatisfaction he felt, in contemplating the accomplifhments of his pupil.

Meanwhile, Pipes did not neglect the order he had received: the beer was produced, the gates were thrown open for the admiffion of all comers, the whole houfe was lighted up, and the petereroes were difcharged in repeated vollies. Such phenomena could not fail to attract the notice of the neighbourhood. The club at Tunley's were aftonifhed at the report of the guns, which produced various conjectures among the members of that fagacious fociety. The landlord obferved, that in all likelihood the commodore was vifited by hobgoblins, and ordered the guns to be fired in token of diftrefs, as he had acted twenty years before, when he was annoyed by the fame grievance. The exciseman, with a waggifh fneer, expreffed his apprehenfion of Trunnion's death, in confequence of which, the petereroes might be difcharged with an equivocal intent, either as fignals of his lady's forrow or rejoicing. The attorney fignified a fufpicion of Hatchway's being married to Mifs Pickle, and that the firings and illuminations were in honour of the nuptials: upon which Gamaliel difcovered fome faint figns of emotion, and taking his pipe from his mouth, gave it as his opinion, that his fifter was brought to bed.

While they were thus bewildered in the maze of their own imagination, a company of countrymen, who fat drinking

drinking in the kitchen, and whofe legs were more ready than their invention, fallied out to know the meaning of thefe exhibitions. Underftanding that there was a butt of ftrong beer abroach in the yard, to which they were invited by the fervants, faved themfelves the trouble and expence of returning to fpend the evening at the publick-houfe, and lifted themfelves under the banner of Tom Pipes, who prefided as director of this feftival.

The news of Peregrine's return being communicated to the parifh, the parfon, and three or four neighbouring gentlemen, who were well-wifhers to our hero, immediately repaired to the garrifon, in order to pay their compliments on this happy event, and were detained to fupper. An elegant entertainment was prepared by the direction of Mifs Julia, who was an excellent houfewife; and the commodore was fo invigorated with joy, that he feemed to have renewed his age.

Among thofe who honoured the occafion with their prefence was Mr. Clover, the young gentleman that made his addreffes to Peregrine's fifter. His heart was fo big with his paffion, that while the reft of the company were ingroffed by their cups, he feized an opportunity of our hero's being detached from the converfation, and in the impatience of his love, conjured him to confent to his happinefs; protefting, that he would comply with any terms of fettlement that a man of his fortune could embrace, in favour of a young lady who was abfolute miftrefs of his affection.

Our youth thanked him very politely for his favourable fentiments and honourable intention towards his fifter, and told him, that at prefent he faw no reafon to obftruct his defire; that he would confult Julia's own inclinations, and confer with him about the means of gratifying his wifh: but in the mean time begged to be excufed from difcuffing any point of fuch importance to them both. Reminding him of the jovial purpofe on which they were happily met, he promoted fuch a quick circulation of the bottle, that their mirth grew

noify

noisy and obstreperous; they broke forth into repeated peals of laughter, without any previous incitement, except that of claret. These explosions were succeeded by bacchanalian songs, in which the old gentleman himself attempted to bear a share; the sedate governor snapped time with his fingers, and the parish priest assisted in the chorus with a most expressive nakedness of countenance. Before midnight, they were almost all pinned to their chairs, as if they had been fixed by the power of inchantment; and what rendered the confinement still more unfortunate, every servant in the house was in the same situation; so that they were fain to take their repose as they sat, and nodded at each other like a congregation of anabaptists.

Next day, Peregrine communed with his sister on the subject of her match with Mr. Clover, who (she told him) had offered to settle a jointure of four hundred pounds, and take her to wife, without any expectation of a dowry. She, moreover, gave him to understand, that in his absence she had received several messages from her mother, commanding her to return to her father's house; but that she had refused to obey these orders, by the advice and injunction of her aunt and the commodore, which were indeed seconded by her own inclination; because she had all the reason in the world to believe, that her mother only wanted an opportunity of treating her with severity and rancour. The resentment of that lady had been carried to such indecent lengths, that seeing her daughter at church one day, she rose up, before the parson entered, and reviled her with great bitterness, in the face of the whole congregation.

CHAP. XXXIII.

Sees his Sister happily married. Visits Emilia, who receives him according to his Deserts.

HER brother being of opinion, that Mr. Clover's proposal was not to be neglected, especially as Julia's heart was engaged in his favour, communicated the affair to his uncle, who, with the approbation of Mrs.

Mrs. Trunnion, declared himſelf well ſatisfied with the young man's addreſſes, and deſired that they might be buckled with all expedition, without the knowledge or concurrence of her parents, to whom (on account of their unnatural barbarity) ſhe was not bound to pay the leaſt regard. Though our adventurer entertained the ſame ſentiments of the matter, and the lover dreading ſome obſtruction, earneſtly begged the immediate condeſcenſion of his miſtreſs, ſhe could not be prevailed upon to take ſuch a material ſtep, without having firſt ſolicited the permiſſion of her father, reſolved, nevertheleſs, to comply with the dictates of her own heart, ſhould his objections be frivolous or unjuſt.

Urged by this determination, her admirer waited upon Mr. Gamaliel at the publick-houſe, and with the appearance of great deference and reſpect, made him acquainted with his affection for his daughter, communicated the particulars of his fortune, with the terms of ſettlement he was ready to make; and in concluſion told him, that he would marry her without a portion. This laſt offer ſeemed to have weight with the father, who received it with civility, and promiſed in a day or two, to favour him with a final anſwer to his demand. He, accordingly, that ſame evening, conſulted his wife; who being exaſperated at the proſpect of her daughter's independency, argued with the moſt virulent expoſtulation againſt the match, as an imprudent ſcheme of her own planning, with a view of inſulting her parents, towards whom ſhe had already been guilty of the moſt vicious diſobedience. In ſhort, ſhe uſed ſuch remonſtrances, as not only averted this weak huſband's inclination from the propoſal which he had reliſhed before, but even inſtigated him to apply for a warrant to apprehend his daughter, on the ſuppoſition that ſhe was about to beſtow herſelf in marriage without his privity or conſent.

The juſtice of peace to whom this application was made, though he could not refuſe the order, yet, being no ſtranger to the malevolence of the mother, which,

together

together with Gamaliel's ſimplicity, was notorious in the county, he ſent an intimation of what had happened to the garriſon; upon which a couple of centinels were placed on the gate, and at the preſſing ſolicitation of the lover, as well as the deſire of the commodore, her brother and aunt, Julia was wedded without farther delay; the ceremony being performed by Mr. Jolter, becauſe the pariſh-prieſt prudently declined any occaſion of giving offence, and the curate was too much in the intereſt of their enemies to be employed in that office.

This domeſtick concern being ſettled to the ſatisfaction of our hero, he eſcorted her next day to the houſe of her huſband, who immediately wrote a letter to her father, declaring his reaſons for having thus ſuperſeded his authority; and Mrs. Pickle's mortification was unſpeakable.

That the new-married couple might be guarded againſt all inſult, our young gentleman and his friend Hatchway, with their adherents, lodged in Mr. Clover's houſe for ſome weeks; during which they viſited their acquaintance in the neighbourhood, according to cuſtom. When the tranquillity of their family was perfectly eſtabliſhed, and the contract of marriage executed in the preſence of the old commodore and his lady, who gave her niece five hundred pounds to purchaſe jewels and cloaths, Mr. Peregrine could no longer reſtrain his impatience to ſee his dear Emily; and told his uncle, that next day he propoſed to ride acroſs the country, in order to viſit his friend Gauntlet, whom he had not heard of a long time.

The old gentleman, looking ſtedfaſtly in his face, 'Ah! damn your cunning!' ſaid he, 'I find the anchor holds faſt: I did ſuppoſe as how you would have ſlipt your cable, and changed your birth; but, I ſee, when a young fellow is once brought up by a pretty wench, he may man his capſtans and viol block, if he wool; but he'll as ſoon heave up the Pike of Teneriffe, as bring his anchor aweigh! Odds heartlikins! had I

known

known the young woman was Ned Gauntlet's daughter, I ſhouldn't have thrown out ſignal for leaving off chace.'

Our adventurer was not a little ſurprized to hear the commodore talk in this ſtyle; and immediately conjectured, that his friend Godfrey had informed him of the whole affair. Inſtead of liſtening to this approbation of his flame, with thoſe tranſports of joy which he would have felt, had he retained his former ſentiments, he was chagrined at Trunnion's declaration, and offended at the preſumption of the young ſoldier, in preſuming to diſcloſe the ſecret with which he had intruſted him. Reddening with theſe reflections, he aſſured the commodore, that he never had ſerious thoughts of matrimony: ſo that if any perſon had told him he was under any engagement of that kind, he had abuſed his ear; for he proteſted, that he would never contract ſuch attachment, without his knowledge and expreſs permiſſion.

Trunnion commended him for his prudent reſolution, and obſerved, that though no perſon mentioned to him what promiſes had paſſed betwixt him and his ſweetheart, it was very plain that he had made love to her; and therefore, it was to be ſuppoſed, that his intentions were honourable: for he could not believe he was ſuch a rogue in his heart, as to endeavour to debauch the daughter of a brave officer, who had ſerved his country with credit and reputation. Notwithſtanding this remonſtrance, which Pickle imputed to the commodore's ignorance of the world, he ſet out for the habitation of Mrs. Gauntlet, with the unjuſtifiable ſentiments of a man of pleaſure, who ſacrifices every conſideration to the deſire of his ruling appetite; and as Wincheſter lay in his way, reſolved to viſit ſome of his friends who lived in that place. It was in the houſe of one of theſe, that he was informed of Emilia's being then in town with her mother; upon which he excuſed himſelf from ſtaying to drink tea, and immedi-

ately repaired to their lodgings, according to the directions he had received.

When he arrived at the door, inftead of undergoing that perturbation of fpirits, which a lover in his interefting fituation might be fuppofed to feel, he fuffered no emotion but that of vanity and pride, favoured with an opportunity of felf-gratification, and entered his Emilia's apartment with the air of a conceited petit maitre, rather than that of the refpectful admirer, when he vifits the object of his paffion after an abfence of eighteen months.

The young lady having been very much difobliged at his mortifying neglect of her brother's letter, had fummoned all her own pride and refolution to her aid; and by means of a happy difpofition, fo far overcame her chagrin at his indifference, that fhe was able to behave in his prefence with apparent tranquillity and eafe. She was even pleafed to find, that he had by accident chofen a time for his vifit, when fhe was furrounded by two or three young gentlemen, who profeffed themfelves her admirers. Our gallant was no fooner announced, than fhe collected all her coquetry, put on the gayeft air fhe could affume, and contrived to giggle juft as he appeared at the room-door. The compliments of falutation being performed, fhe welcomed him to England in a carelefs manner; afked the news of Paris; and, before he could make any reply, defired one of the other gentlemen to proceed with the fequel of that comical adventure, in the relation of which he had been interrupted.

Peregrine fmiled within himfelf at this behaviour, which (without all doubt) he believed fhe had affected to punifh him for his unkind filence while he was abroad; being fully perfuaded that her heart was abfolutely at his devotion. On this fuppofition, he practifed his Parifian improvements on the art of converfation, and uttered a thoufand prettineffes in the way of compliment, with fuch incredible rotation of tongue, that his rivals were ftruck dumb with aftonifhment;

and Emilia fretted out of all temper, at ſeeing herſelf deprived of the prerogative of the ſex. He perſiſted, however, in this ſurprizing loquacity, until the reſt of the company thought proper to withdraw, and then contracted his diſcourſe into the focus of love, which now put on a very different appearance from that which it had formerly worn. Inſtead of that awful veneration which her preſence uſed to inſpire, that chaſtity of ſentiment and delicacy of expreſſion, he now gazed upon her with the eyes of a libertine, he glowed with the impatience of deſire, talked in a ſtrain that barely kept within the bounds of decency, and attempted to ſnatch ſuch favours as ſhe, in the tenderneſs of mutual acknowledgment, had once vouchſafed to beſtow.

Grieved and offended as ſhe was, at this palpable alteration in his carriage, ſhe diſdained to remind him of his former deportment, and with diſſembled good humour, rallied him on the progreſs he had made in gallantry and addreſs: but far from ſubmitting to the liberties he would have taken, ſhe kept her perſon ſacred from his touch, and would not even ſuffer him to raviſh a kiſs of her fair hand: ſo that he reaped no other advantage from the exerciſe of his talents, during this interview, which laſted a whole hour, than that of knowing he had over-rated his own importance, and that Emily's heart was not a garriſon likely to ſurrender at diſcretion.

At length his addreſſes were interrupted by the arrival of the mother, who had gone abroad to viſit by herſelf; and the converſation becoming more general, he underſtood that Godfrey was at London, ſoliciting for a lieutenancy that had fallen vacant in the regiment to which he belonged; and that Miſs Sophy was at home with her father.

Though our adventurer had not met with all the ſucceſs he expected in his firſt viſit, he did not deſpair of reducing the fortreſs, believing that in time there would be a mutiny in his favour; and accordingly

carried on the ſiege for ſeveral days, without profiting by his perſeverance: till at length, having attended the ladies to their own houſe in the country, he began to look upon this adventure as time miſpent, and reſolved to diſcontinue his attack, in hopes of meeting with a more favourable occaſion; being, in the mean time, ambitious of diſplaying, in an higher ſphere, thoſe qualifications which his vanity told him were at preſent miſapplied.

CHAP. XXXIV.

He attends his Uncle with great Affection, during a Fit of Illneſs. Sets out again for London. Meets with his Friend Godfrey, who is prevailed upon to accompany him to Bath; on the Road to which Place they chance to dine with a Perſon, who entertains them with a curious Account of a certain Company of Adventurers.

THUS determined, he took leave of Emilia and her mother, on pretence of going to London upon ſome urgent buſineſs, and returned to the garriſon, leaving the good old lady very much concerned, and the daughter incenſed at his behaviour, which was the more unexpected, becauſe Godfrey had told them that the commodore approved of his nephew's paſſion.

Our adventurer found his uncle ſo ill of the gout, which, for the firſt time, had taken poſſeſſion of his ſtomach, that his life was in imminent danger, and the whole family in diſorder: he therefore took the reins of government in his own hands, ſent for all the phyſicians in the neighbourhood, and attended him in perſon with the moſt affectionate care, during the whole fit, which laſted a fortnight, and then retired before the ſtrength of his conſtitution.

When the old gentleman recovered his health, he was ſo penetrated with Peregrine's behaviour, that he actually would have made over to him his whole fortune, and depended upon him for his own ſubſiſtence, had not our youth oppoſed the execution of the deed with all his influence and might, and even perſuaded him to make

a will, in which his friend Hatchway, and all his other adherents, were liberally remembered, and his aunt provided for on her own terms. This material point being ſettled, he, with his uncle's permiſſion, departed for London, after having ſeen the family affairs eſtabliſhed under the direction and adminiſtration of Mr. Jolter and the lieutenant: for, by this time, Mrs. Trunnion was wholly occupied with her ſpiritual concerns.

On his firſt arrival at London, he ſent a card to the lodgings of Gauntlet, in conſequence of a direction from his mother; and that young gentleman waited on him next morning, though not with that alacrity of countenance and warmth of friendſhip, which might have been expected from the intimacy of their former connection. Nor was Peregrine himſelf actuated by the ſame unreſerved affection for the ſoldier, which he had formerly entertained. Godfrey, over and above the offence he had taken at Pickle's omiſſion in point of correſponding with him, had been informed, by a letter from his mother, of the youth's cavalier behaviour to Emilia, during his laſt reſidence at Wincheſter; and our young gentleman (as we have already obſerved) was diſguſted at the ſuppoſed diſcovery which the ſoldier had made, in his abſence, to the commodore. They perceived their mutual umbrage at meeting, and received each other with that civility of reſerve, which commonly happens between two perſons, when their friendſhip is in the wane.

Gauntlet at once divined the cauſe of the other's diſpleaſure; and in order to vindicate his own character, after the firſt compliments were paſſed, took the opportunity of enquiring after the health of the commodore, to tell Peregrine, that while he tarried at the garriſon, in his return from Dover, the ſubject of the converſation, one night, happening to turn to our hero's paſſion, the old gentleman had expreſſed his concern about that affair; and, among other obſervations, ſaid, he ſuppoſed the object of his love was ſome paltry

huſſy, whom he had picked up when he was a boy at ſchool. Upon which, Mr. Hatchway aſſured him, that ſhe was a young woman of as good a family as any in the county; and after having prepoſſeſſed him in her favour, ventured (out of the zeal of his friendſhip) to tell who ſhe was: wherefore the diſcovery was not to be imputed to any other cauſe; and he hoped Mr. Pickle would acquit him of all ſhare in the tranſaction.

Peregrine was very well pleaſed to be thus undeceived; his countenance immediately cleared up; the formality of his behaviour relaxed into his uſual familiarity; he aſked pardon for his unmannerly neglect of Godfrey's letter, which, he proteſted, was not owing to any diſregard, or abatement of friendſhip, but to a hurry of youthful engagements, in conſequence of which he had procraſtinated his anſwer from time to time, until he was ready to return in perſon.

The young ſoldier was contented with this apology; and as Pickle's intention with reſpect to his ſiſter was ſtill dubious and undeclared, he did not think it was incumbent upon him, as yet, to expreſs any reſentment on that ſcore; but was wiſe enough to foreſee, that the renewal of his intimacy with our young gentleman, might be the means of reviving that flame which had been diſſipated by a variety of new ideas. With theſe ſentiments he laid aſide all reſerve, and their communication immediately reſumed its former channel. Peregrine made him acquainted with all the adventures in which he had been engaged ſince their parting: and he, with the ſame confidence, related the remarkable incidents of his own fate; among other things, giving him to underſtand, that upon obtaining a commiſſion in the army, the father of his dear Sophy, without once enquiring about the occaſion of his promotion, had not only favoured him with his countenance in a much greater degree than heretofore, but alſo contributed his intereſt, and even promiſed the aſſiſtance of his purſe, in procuring for him a lieutenancy, which he was then ſoliciting with all his power; whereas, if

he

he had not been enabled, by a moft accidental piece of good fortune, to lift himfelf into the fphere of an officer, he had all the reafon in the world to believe that this gentleman, and all the reft of his wealthy relations, would have fuffered him to languifh in obfcurity and diftrefs; and, by turning his misfortune into reproach, made it a plea for their own want of generofity and friendfhip.

Peregrine underftanding the fituation of his friend's affairs, would have accommodated him upon the inftant with a fum to accelerate the paffage of his commiffion through the offices; but, being too well acquainted with his fcrupulous difpofition to manifeft his benevolence in that manner, he found means to introduce himfelf to one of the gentlemen of the war-office, who was fo well fatisfied with the arguments he ufed in behalf of his friend, that Godfrey's bufinefs was tranfacted in a very few days, though he himfelf knew nothing of his intereft being thus reinforced.

By this time, the feafon at Bath was begun; and our hero, panting with the defire of diftinguifhing himfelf at that refort of the fafhionable world, communicated his defign of going thither to his friend Godfrey, whom he importuned to accompany him in the excurfion: and leave of abfence from his regiment being obtained, by the influence of Peregrine's new quality friends, the two companions departed from London in a poft-chaife, attended, as ufual, by the valet de chambre and Pipes, who were become almoft as neceffary to our adventurer as any two of his own organs.

At the inn, when they alighted for dinner, Godfrey perceived a perfon walking by himfelf in the yard, with a very penfive air; and upon obferving him more narrowly, recognized him to be a profeffed gamefter, whom he had formerly known at Tunbridge. On the ftrength of this acquaintance, he accofted the peripatetick, whom knew him immediately; and in the fulnefs of his grief and vexation, told him, that he was now on his return from Bath, where he had been ftrip-

ped

ped by a company of ſharpers, who reſented that he ſhould preſume to trade upon his own bottom.

Peregrine, who was extremely curious in his enquiries, imagining that he might learn ſome uſeful and entertaining anecdotes from this artiſt, invited him to dinner, and accordingly was fully informed of all the political ſyſtems at the Bath. He underſtood, that there was at London one great company of adventurers, who employed agents in all the different branches of impoſition throughout the whole kingdom of England, allowing theſe miniſters a certain proportion of the profits accruing from their induſtry and ſkill, and reſerving the greateſt ſhare for the benefit of the common ſtock, which was chargeable with the expence of fitting out individuals in their various purſuits, as well as with the loſs ſuſtained in the courſe of their adventures. Some, whoſe perſons and qualifications are by the company judged adequate to the taſk, exert their talents in making love to ladies of fortune, being accommodated with money and accoutrements for that purpoſe, after having given their bonds, payable to one or other of the directors, on the day of marriage, for certain ſums, proportioned to the dowries they are to receive. Others, verſed in the doctrine of chances, and certain ſecret expedients, frequent all thoſe places where games of hazard are allowed; and ſuch as are maſters in the arts of billiards, tennis, and bowls, are continually lying in wait, in all the ſcenes of theſe diverſions, for the ignorant and unwary. A fourth claſs attend horſe-races, being ſkilled in thoſe myſterious practices, by which the knowing ones are taken in. Nor is this community unfurniſhed with thoſe who lay wanton wives and rich old widows under contribution, and extort money, by proſtituting themſelves to the embraces of their own ſex, and then threatening their admirers with proſecution. But their moſt important returns are made by that body of their undertakers who exerciſe their underſtandings in the innumerable ſtratagems of the card-table, at which

no sharper can be too infamous to be received, and ev caressed, by persons of the highest rank and distinction. Among other articles of intelligence, our young gentleman learned, that those agents, by whom their guest was broke and expelled from Bath, had constituted a bank against all sporters, and monopolized the advantage in all sorts of play. He then told Gauntlet, that if he would put himself under his direction, he would return with them, and lay such a scheme as should infallibly ruin the whole society at billiards, as he knew that Godfrey excelled them all in his knowledge of that game. The soldier excused himself from engaging in any party of that kind; and after dinner the travellers parted; but, as the conversation between the two friends turned upon the information they had received, Peregrine projected a plan for punishing those villainous pests of society, who prey upon their fellow-creatures; and it was put in execution by Gauntlet in this manner.

CHAP. XXXV.

Godfrey executes a Scheme at Bath, by which a whole Company of Sharpers is ruined.

ON the evening after their arrival at Bath, Godfrey, who had kept himself up all day for that purpose, went in boots to the billiard-table; and two gentlemen being at play, began to bet with so little appearance of judgment, that one of the adventurers then present was inflamed with the desire of profiting by his inexperience; and when the table was vacant, invited him to take a game for amusement. The soldier, assuming the air of a self-conceited dupe, answered, that he did not chuse to throw away his time for nothing, but, if he pleased, would piddle for a crown a game. This declaration was very agreeable to the other, who wanted to be farther confirmed in the opinion he had conceived of the stranger, before he would play for any thing of consequence. The *partie* being accepted, Gauntlet put off his coat, and beginning with seeming eagerness, won the first game, because his antagonist

kept

kept up his play with a view of encouraging him to wager a greater ſum. The ſoldier purpoſely bit at the hook, the ſtakes were doubled, and he was again victorious, by the permiſſion of his competitor. He now began to yawn; and obſerving, that it was not worth his while to proceed in ſuch a childiſh manner, the other ſwore, in an affected paſſion, that he would play with him for twenty guineas. The propoſal being embraced, (through the connivance of Godfrey) the money was won by the ſharper, who exerted his dexterity to the utmoſt, fearing that otherwiſe his adverſary would decline continuing the game.

Godfrey thus conquered, pretended to loſe his temper, curſed his own ill-luck, ſwore that the table had a caſt, and that the balls did not run true, changed his maſt, and with great warmth challenged his enemy to double the ſum. The gameſter, with feigned reluctance, complied with his deſire; and having got the firſt two hazards, offered to lay one hundred guineas to fifty on the game. The odds were taken; and Godfrey having allowed himſelf to be overcome, began to rage with great violence, broke the maſt to pieces, threw the balls out of the window, and, in the fury of his indignation, defied his antagoniſt to meet him to-morrow, when he ſhould be refreſhed from the fatigue of travelling. This was a very welcome invitation to the gameſter, who imagining that the ſoldier would turn out a moſt beneficial prize, aſſured him, that he would not fail to be there next forenoon, in order to give him his revenge.

Gauntlet went home to his lodgings, fully certified of his own ſuperiority; and took his meaſures with Peregrine, touching the proſecution of their ſcheme; while his opponent made a report of his ſucceſs to the brethren of the gang, who reſolved to be preſent at the deciſion of the match, with the view of taking advantage of the ſtranger's paſſionate diſpoſition.

Affairs being thus concerted on both ſides, the players met, according to appointment, and the room was immediately filled with ſpectators, who either

came thither by accident, curiofity, or defign. The match was fixed for one hundred pounds a game; the principals chofe their inftruments, and laid afide their coats, and one of the knights of the order proffered to lay another hundred on the head of his affociate. Godfrey took him upon the inftant. A fecond worthy of the fame clafs, feeing him fo eager, challenged him to treble the fum; and his propofal met with the fame reception, to the aftonifhment of the company, whofe expectation was raifed to a very interefting pitch. The game was begun, and the foldier having loft the firft hazard, the odds were offered by the confederacy with great vociferation: but nobody would run fuch a rifk, in favour of a perfon who was utterly unknown. The fharper having gained the fecond alfo, the noife increafed to a furprizing clamour, not only of the gang, but likewife of almoft all the fpectators, who defired to lay two to one againft the brother of Emilia.

Peregrine, who was prefent, perceiving the cupidity of the affociation fufficiently inflamed, all of a fudden opened his mouth, and anfwered their betts to the amount of twelve hundred pounds; which were immediately depofited on both fides, in money and notes: fo that this was, perhaps, the moft important game that ever was played at billiards. Gauntlet feeing the agreement fettled, ftruck his antagonift's ball into the pocket in a twinkling, though it was in one of thofe fituations which are fuppofed to be againft the ftriker. The betters were a little difcompofed at this event, for which, however, they confoled themfelves, by imputing the fuccefs to accident; but when at the very next ftroke he fprung it over the table, their countenances underwent an inftantaneous diftraction of feature, and they waited, in the moft dreadful fufpenfe, for the next hazard, which being likewife taken with infinite eafe by the foldier, the blood forfook their cheeks, and the interjection *Zounds!* pronounced with a look of confternation, and in a tone of defpair, proceeded from every mouth at the fame inftant of time. They were overwhelmed

overwhelmed with horror and aſtoniſhment, at ſeeing three-hazards taken in as many ſtrokes, from a perſon of their friend's dexterity; and ſhrewdly ſuſpected, that the whole was a ſcheme pre-concerted for their deſtruction; on this ſuppoſition, they changed the note, and attempted to hedge for their own indemnification, by propoſing to lay the odds in favour of Gauntlet; but ſo much was the opinion of the company altered by that young gentleman's ſucceſs, that nobody would venture to eſpouſe the cauſe of his competitor, who chancing to improve his game by the addition of another lucky hit, diminiſhed the concern, and revived the hopes of his adherents. But this gleam of fortune did not long continue: Godfrey collected his whole art and capacity, and augmenting his ſcore to number ten, indulged himſelf with a view of the whole fraternity. The viſages of theſe profeſſors had adopted different ſhades of complexion at every hazard he had taken; from their natural colour they had ſhifted into a ſallow hue; from thence into pale; from pale into yellow, which degenerated into a mahogany tint; and now they ſaw ſeventeen hundred pounds of their ſtock depending upon a ſingle ſtroke, they ſtood like ſo many ſwarthy Moors, jaundiced with terror and vexation. The fire which naturally glowed in the cheeks and noſe of the player, ſeemed utterly extinct, and his carbuncles exhibited a lived appearance, as if a gangrene had already made ſome progreſs in his face: his hand began to ſhake, and his whole frame was ſeized with ſuch trepidation, that he was fain to ſwallow a bumper of brandy, in order to re-eſtabliſh the tranquillity of his nerves. This expedient, however, did not produce the deſired effect; for he aimed the ball at the lead with ſuch diſcompoſure, that it ſtruck on the wrong ſide, and came off at an angle which directed it full in the middle hole. This fatal accident was attended with an univerſal groan, as if the whole univerſe had gone to wreck; and notwithſtanding that tranquillity, for which adventurers are ſo remarkable, this loſs made ſuch an impreſſion

impreſſion upon them all, that each in particular manifeſted his chagrin, by the moſt violent emotions. One turned up his eyes to heaven, and bit his nether lip; another gnawed his fingers, while he ſtalked acroſs the room; a third blaſphemed with horrid imprecations; and he who played the party ſneaked off, grinding his teeth together, with a look that baffles all deſcription, and as he croſſed the threſhold, exclaiming, 'A damned bite, by G—d!'

The victors, after having inſulted them, by aſking if they were diſpoſed for another chance, carried off their winning with the appearance of great compoſure, though in their hearts they were tranſported with unſpeakable joy; not ſo much on account ſo the booty they had gained, as in conſideration of having of effectually deſtroyed ſuch a neſt of pernicious miſcreants.

Peregrine believing, that now he had found an opportunity of ſerving his friend, without giving offence to the delicacy of his honour, told him upon their arrival at their lodgings, that fortune had at length enabled him to become in a manner independant, or at leaſt make himſelf eaſy in his circumſtances, by purchaſing a company with the money he had won. So ſaying, he put his ſhare of the ſucceſs in Gauntlet's hand, as a ſum that of right belonged to him, and promiſed to write in his behalf to a nobleman, who had intereſt enough to promote ſuch a quick riſe in the ſervice.

Godfrey thanked him for his obliging intention, but abſolutely refuſed, with great loftineſs of demeanor, to appropriate to his own uſe any part of the money which Pickle had gained, and ſeemed affronted at the other's entertaining a ſentiment ſo unworthy of his character. He would not even accept, in the way of loan, ſuch an addition to his own ſtock, as would amount to the price of a company of foot; but expreſſed great confidence in the future exertion of that talent which had been bleſſed with ſuch a proſperous beginning. Our hero finding him thus obſtinately deaf to the voice of his own

interest, resolved to govern himself in his next endeavours of friendship, by his experience of this ticklish punctilio; and, in the mean time, gave a handsome benefaction to the hospital, out of the first-fruits of the success in play, and reserved two hundred pounds for a set of diamond ear-rings and solitaire, which he intended for a present to Miss Emily.

CHAP. XXXVI.

The two Friends eclipse all their Competitors in Gallantry, and practise a pleasant Project of Revenge upon the Physicians of the Place.

THE fame of their exploits against the sharpers was immediately diffused through all companies at the Bath; so that when our adventurers appeared in publick, they were pointed out by an hundred extended fingers, and considered as consummate artists in all the different species of finesse, which they would not fail to practise with the first opportunity. Nor was this opinion of their characters any obstacle to their reception into the fashionable parties in the place; but, on the contrary, such a recommendation, which (as I have already hinted) never fails to operate for the advantage of the possessor.

This first adventure, therefore, served them as an introduction to the company at Bath, who were not a little surprized to find their expectations baffled by the conduct of the two companions; because, far from engaging deeply at play, they rather shunned all occasions of gaming, and directed their attention to gallantry, in which our hero shone unrivalled. His external qualifications, exclusive of any other merit, were strong enough to captivate the common run of the female sex; and these, reinforced with a sprightliness of conversation, and a most insinuating address, became irresistible, even by those who were fortified with pride, caution, or indifference. But among all the nymphs of this gay place, he did not meet with one object that disputed the empire of his heart with Emilia, and therefore he divided his attachment according to the suggestions

geftions of vanity and whim; fo that, before he had refided a fortnight at the Bath, he had fet all the ladies by the ears, and furnifhed all the hundred tongues of fcandal with full employment. The fplendor of his appearance excited the enquiries of envy; which, inftead of difcovering any circumftance to his prejudice, was curfed with the information of his being a young gentleman of a good family, and heir to an immenfe fortune.

The countenance of fome of his quality friends, who arrived at Bath, confirmed this piece of intelligence: upon which his acquaintance was courted and cultivated with great affiduity; and he met with fuch advances from fome of the fair-fex, as rendered him extremely fortunate in his amours. Nor was his friend Godfrey a ftranger to favours of the fame kind; his accomplifhments were exactly calculated for the meridian of female tafte; and with certain individuals of that fex, his mufcular frame, and the robuft connection of his limbs, were more attractive than the delicate proportions of his companion. He accordingly reigned paramount among thofe inamoratas who were turned of thirty, without being under the neceffity of proceeding by tedious addreffes; and was thought to have co-operated with the waters, in removing the fterility of certain ladies, who had long undergone the reproach and difguft of their hufbands: while Peregrine fet up his throne among thofe who laboured under the difeafe of celibacy, from the pert mifs of fifteen, who, with a fluttering heart, toffes her head, bridles up, and giggles involuntarily at the fight of an handfome young man, to the ftaid maiden of twenty-eight, who with a demure afpect moralizes on the vanity of beauty, the folly of youth, and fimplicity of woman, and expatiates on friendfhip, benevolence, and good fenfe, in the ftyle of a Platonick philofopher.

In fuch a diverfity of difpofitions, his conquefts were attended with all the heart-burnings, animofities, and turmoils of jealoufy and fpite. The younger

clafs took all opportunities of mortifying their feniors in publick, by treating them with that indignity which (contrary to the general privilege of age) is by the confent and connivance of mankind, levelled againft thofe who have the misfortune to come under the denomination of old maids; and thefe laft retorted their hoftilities in the private machinations of flander, fupported by experience and fubtilty of invention. Not one day paffed, in which fome new ftory did not circulate, to the prejudice of one or other of thofe rivals.

If our hero, in the long-room, chanced to quit one of the moralifts, with whom he had been engaged in converfation, he was immediately accofted by a number of the oppofite faction; who, with ironical fmiles, upbraided him with cruelty to the poor lady he had left; exhorted him to have compaffion on her fufferings; and turning their eyes towards the object of their interceffion, broke forth into an univerfal peal of laughter. On the other hand, when Peregrine, in confequence of having danced with one of the minors overnight, vifited her in the morning, the Platonifts immediately laid hold on the occafion, tafked their imaginations, affociated ideas, and with fage infinuations retailed a thoufand circumftances of the interview, which never had any foundation in truth. They obferved, that if girls are determined to behave with fuch indifcretion, they muft lay their accounts with incurring the cenfure of the world; that fhe in queftion was old enough to act more circumfpectly; and wondered that her mother would permit any young fellow to approach the chamber, while her daughter was naked in bed. As for the fervants peeping through the keyhole, to be fure it was an unlucky accident; but people ought to be upon their guard againft fuch curiofity, and give their domefticks no caufe to employ their penetration. Thefe, and other fuch reflections, were occafionally whifpered as fecrets among thofe who were known to be communicative; fo that, in a few hours, it became the general topick of difcourfe; and as it had

been

been divulged under injunctions of ſecreſy, it was almoſt impoſſible to trace the ſcandal to its origin; becauſe every perſon concerned muſt have promulgated her own breach of truſt, in diſcovering her author of the report.

Peregrine, inſtead of allaying, rather exaſperated this contention, by an artful diſtribution of his attention among the competitors; well knowing, that ſhould his regard be converged into one point, he would ſoon forfeit the pleaſure he enjoyed in ſeeing them at variance; for both parties would join againſt the common enemy, and his favourite would be perſecuted by the whole coalition. He perceived, that among the ſecret agents of ſcandal, none was ſo buſy as the phyſicians; a claſs of animals who live in this place, like ſo many ravens hovering about a carcaſe, and even ply for employment, like ſcullers at Hungerford-ſtairs. The greateſt part of them have correſpondents in London, who make it their buſineſs to enquire into the hiſtory, character, and diſtemper, of every one that repairs to Bath for the benefit of the waters; and if they cannot procure intereſt to recommend their medical friends to the patients before they ſet out, they at leaſt furniſh them with a previous account of what they could collect, that their correſpondents may uſe their intelligence for their own advantage. By theſe means, and the aſſiſtance of flattery and aſſurance, they often inſinuate themſelves into the acquaintance of ſtrangers, and by conſulting their diſpoſitions, become neceſſary and ſubſervient to their prevailing paſſions. By their connection with apothecaries and nurſes, they are informed of all the private occurrences in each family; and therefore enabled to gratify the rancour of malice, amuſe the ſpleen of peeviſh indiſpoſition, and entertain the eagerneſs of impertinent curioſity.

In the courſe of theſe occupations, which frequently affected the reputation of our two adventurers, this whole body fell under the diſpleaſure of our hero; who, after divers conſultations with his friend, con-

certed a ſtratagem, which was practiſed upon the faculty in this manner. Among thoſe who frequented the pump-room, was an old officer, whoſe temper, naturally impatient, was, by repeated attacks of the gout, which had almoſt deprived him of the uſe of his limbs, ſublimated into a remarkable degree of virulence and perverſeneſs; he imputed the inveteracy of his diſtemper to the mal-practice of a ſurgeon who had adminiſtered to him, while he laboured under the conſequences of an unfortunate amour; and this ſuppoſition had inſpired him with an inſurmountable antipathy to all the profeſſors of the medical art, which was more and more confirmed by the information of a friend at London, who had told him, that it was a common practice among the phyſicians at Bath, to diſſuade their patients from drinking the water, that the cure, and of conſequence their attendance, might be longer protracted.

Thus prepoſſeſſed, he had come to Bath, and, conformable to a few general inſtructions he had received, uſed the waters without any farther direction, taking all occaſions of manifeſting his hatred and contempt of the ſons of Æſculapius, both by ſpeech and geſticulations, and even by purſuing a regimen quite contrary to that which he knew they preſcribed to others who ſeemed to be exactly in his condition. But he did not find his account in this method, how ſucceſsful ſoever it may have been in other caſes. His complaints, inſtead of vaniſhing, were every day more and more enraged; and, at length, he was confined to his bed, where he lay blaſpheming from morn to night, and from night to morn; though ſtill more determined than ever to adhere to his former maxims.

In the midſt of his torture, which was become the common joke of the town, being circulated through the induſtry of the phyſicians, who triumphed in his diſaſter, Peregrine, by means of Mr. Pipes, employed a country fellow, who had come to market, to run with great haſte, early one morning, to the lodgings of all

the

the doctors in town, and desire them to attend the colonel with all imaginable dispatch. In consequence of this summons, the whole faculty put themselves in motion: and three of the foremost arriving at the same instant of time, far from complimenting one another with the door, each separately essayed to enter, and the whole triumvirate stuck in the passage. While they remained thus wedged together, they descried two of their brethren posting towards the same goal, with all the speed that God had enabled them to exert; upon which they came to a parley, and agreed to stand by one another. This covenant being made, they disentangled themselves, and enquiring about the patient, were told by the servant, that he had just fallen asleep.

Having received this intelligence, they took possession of his anti-chamber, and shut the door, while the rest of the tribe posted themselves on the outside, as they arrived; so that the whole passage was filled from the top of the stair-case to the street-door; and the people of the house, together with the colonel's servant, struck dumb with astonishment. The three leaders of this learned gang had no sooner made their lodgment good, than they began to consult about the patient's malady, which every one of them pretended to have considered with great care and assiduity. The first who gave his opinion said, the distemper was an obstinate arthritis; the second affirmed, that it was no other than a confirmed pox; and the third swore it was an inveterate scurvy. This diversity of opinions was supported by a variety of quotations from medical authors, ancient as well as modern; but these were not of sufficient authority, or at least not explicit enough to decide the dispute; for there are many schisms in medicine, as well as in religion, and each sect can quote the fathers in support of the tenets they profess. In short, the contention rose to such a pitch of clamour, as not only alarmed the brethren on the stair, but also awaked the patient from the first nap he had enjoyed

in the ſpace of ten whole days. Had it been ſimply waking, he would have been obliged to them for the noiſe that diſturbed him; for, in that caſe he would have been relieved from the tortures of hell-fire, to which in his dream he fancied himſelf expoſed: but this dreadful viſion had been the reſult of that impreſſion which was made upon his brain, by the intolerable anguiſh of his joints; ſo that when he waked, the pain, inſtead of being allayed, was rather aggravated by a great acuteneſs of ſenſation; and the confuſed vociferation in the next room, invading his ears at the ſame time, he began to think his dream was realized; and, in the pangs of deſpair, applied himſelf to a bell that ſtood by his bedſide, which he rung with great violence and perſeverance.

This alarm put an immediate ſtop to the diſputation of the three doctors, who, upon this notice of his being awake, ruſhed into his chamber without ceremony; and two of them ſeizing his arms, the third made the like application to one of his temples. Before the patient could recollect himſelf from the amazement which had laid hold on him, at this unexpected irruption, the room was filled by the reſt of the faculty, who followed the ſervant that entered, in obedience to his maſter's call; and the bed was, in a moment, ſurrounded by theſe gaunt miniſters of death. The colonel ſeeing himſelf beſet with ſuch an aſſemblage of ſolemn viſages and figures, which he had always conſidered with the utmoſt deteſtation and abhorrence, was incenſed to a moſt inexpreſſible degree of indignation; and ſo inſpirited by his rage, that though his tongue denied its office, his other limbs performed their function; he diſengaged himſelf from the triumvirate, who had taken poſſeſſion of his body, ſprung out of bed with incredible agility, and ſeizing one of his crutches, applied it ſo effectually to one of the three, juſt as he ſtooped to examine the patient's water, that his tie-periwig dropped into the pot, while he himſelf fell motionleſs on the floor.

This ſignificant explanation diſconcerted the whole fraternity;

fraternity; every man turned his face, as it were by inſtinct, towards the door; and the retreat of the community being obſtructed by the efforts of individuals, confuſion and tumultuous uproar enſued: for the colonel, far from limiting his proweſs to the firſt exploit, handled his weapon with aſtoniſhing vigour and dexterity, without reſpect of perſons; ſo that few or none of them had eſcaped without marks of his diſpleaſure, when his ſpirits failed, and he ſunk down again, quite exhauſted, on his bed. Favoured by this reſpite, the diſcomfited faculty collected their hats and wigs, which had fallen off in the fray; and perceiving the aſſailant too much enfeebled to renew the attack, ſet up their throats together, and loudly threatened to proſecute him ſeverely for ſuch an outrageous aſſault.

By this time the landlord had interpoſed; and enquiring into the cauſe of the diſturbance, was informed of what had happened by the complainants, who at the ſame time giving him to underſtand, that they had been ſeverally ſummoned to attend the colonel that morning, he aſſured them, that they had been impoſed upon by ſome wag, for his lodger had never dreamed of conſulting any one of their profeſſion.

Thunderſtruck at this declaration, the general clamour inſtantaneouſly ceaſed; and each, in particular, at once comprehending the nature of the joke, they ſneaked ſilently off with the loſs they had ſuſtained, in unutterable ſhame and mortification; while Peregrine and his friend, who took care to be paſſing that way by accident, made a full ſtop at ſight of ſuch an extraordinary efflux, and enjoyed the countenance and condition of every one as he appeared: nay, even made up to ſome of thoſe who ſeemed moſt affected with their ſituation, and miſchievouſly tormented them with queſtions touching this unuſual congregation; then, in conſequence of the information they received from the landlord and the colonel's valet, ſubjected the ſufferers

to the ridicule of all the company in town. As it would have been impoſſible for the authors of this farce to keep themſelves concealed from the indefatigable enquiries of the phyſicians, they made no ſecret of their having directed the whole; though they took care to own it in ſuch an ambiguous manner, as afforded no handle of proſecution.

CHAP. XXXVII.

Peregrine humbles a noted Hector, and meets with a ſtrange Character at the Houſe of a certain Lady.

AMONG thoſe who never failed to reſide at Bath, during the ſeaſon, was a certain perſon, who, from the moſt abject miſery, had, by his induſtry and art at play, amaſſed about fifteen thouſand pounds; and though his character was notorious, inſinuated himſelf ſo far into the favour of what is called the beſt company, that very few private parties of pleaſure took place, in which he was not principally concerned. He was of a gigantick ſtature, a moſt intrepid countenance; and his diſpoſition, naturally overbearing, had in the courſe of his adventures and ſucceſs, acquired a moſt intolerable degree of inſolence and vanity. By the ferocity of his features, and audacity of his behaviour, he had obtained a reputation for the moſt undaunted courage, which had been confirmed by divers adventures, in which he had humbled the moſt aſſuming heroes of his own fraternity: ſo that he now reigned chief Hector of the place, with unqueſtioned authority.

With this ſon of Fortune was Peregrine one evening engaged at play, and ſo ſucceſsful, that he could not help informing his friend of his good luck. Godfrey hearing the deſcription of the loſer, immediately recognized the perſon, whom he had known at Tunbridge; and aſſuring Pickle, that he was a ſharper of the firſt water, cautioned him againſt any farther connection with ſuch a dangerous companion; who (he affirmed) had ſuffered him to win a ſmall ſum, that he might be

encouraged

encouraged to lose a much greater sum upon some other occasion.

Our young gentleman treasured up this advice; and though he did not scruple to give the gamester an opportunity of retrieving his loss, when he the next day demanded his revenge, he absolutely refused to proceed, after he had refunded his winning. The other, who considered him as a hot-headed unthinking youth, endeavoured to enflame his pride to a continuance of the game, by treating his skill with scorn and contempt; and, among other sarcastick expressions, advised him to go to school again, before he pretended to engage with masters of the art. Our hero, incensed at his arrogance, replied with great warmth, that he knew himself sufficiently qualified for playing with men of honour, who deal upon the square, and hoped he should always deem it infamous, either to learn or practise the tricks of a professed gamester. 'Blood and thunder! meaning me, Sir!' cried this artist, raising his voice, and curling his visage into a most intimidating frown. 'Zounds! I'll cut the throat of any scoundrel who has the presumption to suppose, that I don't play as honourably as e'er a nobleman in the kingdom: and I insist upon an explanation from you, Sir; or, by hell and brimstone! I shall expect other sort of satisfaction.' Peregrine (whose blood by this time boiled within him) answered without hesitation: 'Far from thinking your demand unreasonable, I will immediately explain myself without reserve, and tell you, that, upon unquestionable authority, I believe you to be an impudent rascal, and common cheat.'

The Hector was so amazed and confounded at the freedom of this declaration, which he thought no man on earth would venture to make in his presence, that for some minutes he could not recollect himself; but at length, whispered a challenge in the ear of our hero, which was accordingly accepted. When they arrived next morning upon the field, the gamester arming his countenance with all his terrors, advanced with a sword

of

of a monſtrous length, and putting himſelf in a poſture, called aloud, in a moſt terrifick voice, 'Draw, damn ye! draw; I will this inſtant ſend you to your fathers.' The youth was not ſlow in complying with his deſire; his weapon was unſheathed in a moment, and he began the attack with ſuch unexpected ſpirit and addreſs, that his adverſary, having made ſhift with great difficulty to parry the firſt paſs, retreated a few paces, and demanded a parley; in which he endeavoured to perſuade the young man, that to lay a man of his character under the neceſſity of chaſtiſing his inſolence, was the moſt raſh and inconſiderate ſtep that he could poſſibly have taken; but that he had compaſſion upon his youth, and was willing to ſpare him if he would ſurrender his ſword, and promiſe to aſk pardon in publick for the offence he had given. Pickle was ſo much exaſperated at this unparalleled effrontery, that without deigning to make the leaſt reply, he flung his own hat in the propoſer's face, and renewed the charge with ſuch undaunted agility, that the gameſter, finding himſelf in manifeſt hazard of his life, betook himſelf to his heels, and fled homewards with incredible ſpeed, being cloſely purſued by Peregrine, who having ſheathed his ſword, pelted him with ſtones as he ran, and compelled him to go, that ſame day, into baniſhment from Bath, where he had domineered ſo long.

By this atchievement, which was the ſubject of aſtoniſhment to all the company, who had looked upon the fugitive as a perſon of heroick courage, our adventurer's reputation was rendered formidable in all its circumſtances; although he thereby diſobliged a good many people of faſhion, who had contracted an intimacy of friendſhip with the exile, and who reſented his diſgrace, as if it had been the misfortune of a worthy man. Theſe generous patrons, however, bore a very ſmall proportion to thoſe who were pleaſed with the event of the duel; becauſe, in the courſe of their reſidence at Bath, they had either been inſulted or defrauded

ed by the challenger. Nor was this inftance of our hero's courage unacceptable to the ladies, few of whom could now refift the united force of fuch accomplifhments. Indeed, neither he nor his friend Godfrey would have found much difficulty in picking up an agreeable companion for life: but Gauntlet's heart was pre-engaged to Sophy; and Pickle, exclufive of his attachment to Emily, which was ftronger than he himfelf imagined, poffeffed fuch a fhare of ambition, as could not be fatisfied with the conqueft of any female he beheld at Bath.

His vifits were, therefore, promifcuous, without any other view than that of amufement; and though his pride was flattered by the advances of the fair whom he had captivated, he never harboured one thought of proceeding beyond the limits of common gallantry, and carefully avoided all particular explanations. But what, above all other enjoyments, yielded him the moft agreeable entertainment, was the fecret hiftory of characters, which he learned from a very extraordinary perfon, with whom he became acquainted in this manner.

Being at the houfe of a certain lady, on a vifiting day, he was ftruck with the appearance of an old man, who no fooner entered the room than the miftrefs of the houfe very kindly defired one of the wits prefent to roaft the old put. This petit-maitre, proud of the employment, went up to the fenior, who had fomething extremely peculiar and fignificant in his countenance, and faluting him with divers fafhionable congés, accofted him in thefe words: 'Your fervant, you old rafcal. I hope to have the honour of feeing you hanged. I vow to Gad! you look extremely fhocking, with thefe gummy eyes, lanthorn jaws, and toothlefs chaps. What! you fquint at the ladies, you old rotten medlar? Yes, yes, we underftand your ogling; but you muft content yourfelf with a cook-maid, fink me! I fee you want to fit. Thefe withered fhanks of your's tremble under their burden: but you muft

have a little patience, old Hirco; indeed you muſt. I intend to mortify you a little longer, curſe me!'

The company was ſo tickled with this addreſs, which was delivered with much grimace and geſticulation, that they burſt out into a loud fit of laughter, which they fathered upon a monkey that was chained in the room; and when the peal was over, the wit renewed his attack, in theſe words. 'I ſuppoſe you are fool enough to think this mirth was occaſioned by Pug; aye, there he is; you had beſt ſurvey him; he is of your own family, ſwitch me! but the laugh was at your expence; and you ought to thank Heaven for making you ſo ridiculous.' While he uttered theſe ingenious ejaculations, the old gentleman bowed alternately to him and the monkey, that ſeemed to grin and chatter in imitation of the beau, and with an arch ſolemnity of viſage, pronounced, 'Gentlemen, as I have not the honour to underſtand your compliments, they will be much better beſtowed on each other.' So ſaying, he ſeated himſelf, and had the ſatisfaction to ſee the laugh returned upon the aggreſſor, who remained confounded and abaſhed, and in a few minutes left the room, muttering, as he retired, 'The old fellow grows ſcurrilous, ſtap my breath!'

While Peregrine wondered in ſilence at this extraordinary ſcene, the lady of the houſe perceiving his ſurprize, gave him to underſtand, that the ancient viſitant was utterly bereft of the ſenſe of hearing; that his name was Cadwallader Crabtree; his diſpoſition altogether miſanthropical; and that he was admitted into company on account of the entertainment he afforded by his ſarcaſtick obſervations, and the pleaſant miſtakes to which he was ſubject from his infirmity. Nor did our hero wait a long time for an illuſtration of this odd character. Every ſentence he ſpoke was replete with gall; nor did his ſatire conſiſt in general reflections, but in ſeries of remarks, which had been made through the medium of a moſt whimſical peculiarity of opinion.

Among thoſe who were preſent at this aſſembly was

a young

a young officer, who having by dint of intereſt obtained a ſeat in the lower houſe, thought it incumbent upon him to talk of affairs of ſtate; and accordingly regaled the company with an account of a ſecret expedition which the French were buſied in preparing; aſſuring them, that he had it from the mouth of the miniſter, to whom it had been tranſmitted by one of his agents abroad. In deſcanting upon the particulars of the armament, he obſerved, that they had twenty ſhips of the line, ready manned and victualled at Breſt, which were deſtined for Toulon, where they would be joined by as many more; and from thence proceed to the execution of their ſcheme, which he imparted as a ſecret not fit to be divulged.

This piece of intelligence being communicated to all the company except Mr. Crabtree, who ſuffered by his loſs of hearing, that cynick was ſoon after accoſted by a lady, who, by means of an artificial alphabet, formed by a certain conjunction and diſpoſition of the fingers, aſked if he had heard any extraordinary news of late. Cadwallader, with his uſual complaiſance, replied that he ſuppoſed ſhe took him for a courier or ſpy, by teazing him eternally with that queſtion. He then expatiated upon the fooliſh curioſity of mankind, which, he ſaid, muſt either proceed from idleneſs or want of ideas; and repeated, almoſt *verbatim*, the officer's information; a vague ridiculous report invented by ſome ignorant coxcomb, who wanted to give himſelf airs of importance, and believed only by thoſe who were utterly unacquainted with the politicks and ſtrength of the French nation.

In confirmation of what he had advanced, he endeavoured to demonſtrate how impoſſible it muſt be for that people to fit out even the third part of ſuch a navy, ſo ſoon after the loſſes they had ſuſtained during the war; and confirmed his proof by aſſerting, that, to his certain knowledge, the harbours of Breſt and Toulon could not at that time produce a ſquadron of eight ſhips of the line. The

The member, who was an utter ſtranger to this miſanthrope, hearing his own aſſeverations treated with ſuch contempt, glowed with confuſion and reſentment, and raiſing his voice, began to defend his own veracity with great eagerneſs and trepidation, mingling with his arguments many bluſtering invectives againſt the inſolence and ill-manners of his ſuppoſed contradictor, who ſat with the moſt mortifying compoſure of countenance, till the officer's patience was quite exhauſted; and then, to the manifeſt increaſe of his vexation, he was informed, that his antagoniſt was ſo deaf, that, in all probability, the laſt trumpet would make no impreſſion upon him, without a previous renovation of his organs.

CHAP. XXXVIII.

He cultivates an Acquaintance with the Miſanthrope, who favours him with a ſhort Sketch of his own Hiſtory.

PEREGRINE was extremely well pleaſed with this occaſional rebuke, which occurred ſo ſeaſonably, that he could ſcarce believe it accidental. He looked upon Cadwallader as the greateſt curioſity he had ever known, and cultivated the old man's acquaintance with ſuch inſinuating addreſs, that in leſs than a fortnight he obtained his confidence. As they one day walked into the fields together, the man-hater diſcloſed himſelf in theſe words. 'Though the term of our communication has been but ſhort, you muſt have perceived, that I treat you with uncommon marks of regard; which, I aſſure you, is not owing to your perſonal accompliſhments, nor the pains you take to oblige me; for the firſt I overlook, and the laſt I ſee through: but there is ſomething in your diſpoſition which indicates a rooted contempt for the world; and I underſtand you have made ſome ſucceſsful efforts in expoſing one part of it to the ridicule of the other. It is upon this aſſurance that I offer you my advice and aſſiſtance, in proſecuting other ſchemes of the ſame nature; and to convince you that ſuch an alliance is not to be rejected,

I will

I will now give you a ſhort ſketch of my hiſtory, which will be publiſhed after my death in forty-ſeven volumes of my own compiling.

'I was born about forty miles from this place, of parents, who having a very old family name to ſupport, beſtowed their whole fortune on my elder brother; ſo that I inherited of my father little elſe than a large ſhare of choler, to which I am indebted for a great many adventures that did not always end to my ſatisfaction. At the age of eighteen I was ſent up to town, with a recommendation to a certain peer, who found means to amuſe me with the promiſe of a commiſſion for ſeven whole years; and 'tis odds but I ſhould have made my fortune by my perſeverance, had not I been arreſted, and thrown into the Marſhalſea by my landlord, on whoſe credit I had ſubſiſted three years, after my father had renounced me as an idle vagabond. There I remained ſix months, among thoſe priſoners who have no other ſupport than chance charity; and contracted a very valuable acquaintance, which was of great ſervice to me in the future emergencies of my life.

'I was no ſooner diſcharged, in conſequence of an act of parliament for the relief of inſolvent debtors, than I went to the houſe of my creditor, whom I cudgelled without mercy; and that I might leave nothing undone of thoſe things which I ought to have done, my next ſtage was to Weſtminſter Hall, where I waited until my patron came forth from the houſe, and ſaluted him with a blow that laid him ſenſeleſs on the pavement: but my retreat was not ſo fortunate as I could have wiſhed; the chairman and lacquies in waiting having ſurrounded and diſarmed me in a trice, I was committed to Newgate, and loaded with chains; and a very ſagacious gentleman, who was afterwards hanged, having ſat in judgment upon my caſe, pronounced me guilty of a capital crime, and foretold my condemnation at the Old Bailey. His prognoſtick, however, was diſappointed; for nobody appearing to

prosecute me at the next sessions, I was discharged by order of the court. It would be impossible for me to recount, in the compass of one day's conversation, all the particular exploits in which I bore a considerable share. Suffice it to say, I have been, at different times, prisoner in all the gaols within the bills of mortality. I have broke from every round-house on this side Temple-bar. No bailiff, in the days of my youth and desperation, durst execute a writ upon me without a dozen followers; and the justices themselves trembled when I was brought before them.

'I was once maimed by a carman, with whom I quarrelled, because he ridiculed my leek on St. David's day; my skull was fractured by a butcher's cleaver, on the like occasion. I have been run through the body five times, and lost the tip of my left ear by a pistol-bullet. In a rencounter of this kind, having left my antagonist for dead, I was wise enough to make my retreat into France; and a few days after my arrival at Paris, entered into conversation with some officers on the subject of politicks; a dispute arose, in which I lost my temper, and spoke so irreverently of the *Grand Monarque*, that next morning I was sent to the Bastile, by virtue of a *Lettre de Cachet*. There I remained for some months, deprived of all intercourse with rational creatures; a circumstance for which I was not sorry, as I had the more time to project schemes of revenge against the tyrant who confined me, and the wretch who had betrayed my private conversation: but tired, at length, with these fruitless suggestions, I was fain to unbend the severity of my thoughts by a correspondence with some industrious spiders, who had hung my dungeon with their ingenious labours.

'I considered their work with such attention, that I soon became an adept in the mystery of weaving, and furnished myself with as many useful observations and reflections on that art, as will compose a very curious Treatise, which I intend to bequeath to the Royal Society, for the benefit of our woollen manufacture; and

this

this with a view to perpetuate my own name, rather than befriend my country; for, thank Heaven! I am weaned from all attachments of that kind, and look upon myſelf as one very little obliged to any ſociety whatſoever. Although I preſided with abſolute power over this long-legged community, and diſtributed rewards and puniſhments to each, according to his deſerts, I grew impatient of my ſituation; and my natural diſpoſition, one day, prevailed like a fire which had long been ſmothered, I wreaked the fury of my indignation upon my innocent ſubjects, and in a twinkling deſtroyed the whole race. While I was employed in this general maſſacre, the turnkey, who brought me food, opened the door, and perceiving my tranſport, ſhrugged up his ſhoulders, and leaving my allowance, went out pronouncing, "*Le pauvre diable! la tête lui tourne.*" My paſſion no ſooner ſubſided, than I reſolved to profit by this opinion of the gaoler, and from that day counterfeited lunacy with ſuch ſucceſs, that in leſs than three months I was delivered from the Baſtile, and ſent to the gallies, in which they thought my bodily vigour might be of ſervice, although the faculties of my mind were decayed. Before I was chained to the oar, I received three hundred ſtripes by way of welcome, that I might thereby be rendered more tractable, notwithſtanding I uſed all the arguments in my power to perſuade them, I was only *mad north, north-weſt; and when the wind was ſoutherly, knew a hawk from an hand-ſaw.*

'In our ſecond cruize we had the good fortune to be overtaken by a tempeſt, during which the ſlaves were unbound, that they might contribute the more to the preſervation of the galley, and have a chance for their lives, in caſe of ſhipwreck. We were no ſooner at liberty, than making ourſelves maſters of the veſſel, we robbed the officers, and ran her on ſhore among rocks on the coaſt of Portugal; from whence I haſtened to Liſbon, with a view of obtaining my paſſage in ſome

ſhip

ſhip bound for England, where, by this time, I hoped my affair was forgotten.

'But before this ſcheme could be accompliſhed, my evil genius led me into company; and being intoxicated, I began to broach doctrines on the ſubject of religion, at which ſome of the *partie* were ſcandalized and incenſed; and I was next day dragged out of bed by the officers of the inquiſition, and conveyed to a cell in the priſon belonging to that tribunal.

'At my firſt examination my reſentment was ſtrong enough to ſupport me under the torture, which I endured without flinching; but my reſolution abated, and my zeal immediately cooled, when I underſtood from a fellow priſoner, who groaned on the other ſide of the partition, that in a ſhort time there would be an *Auto da Fe*; in conſequence of which I ſhould, in all probability, be doomed to the flames, if I would not renounce my heretical errors, and ſubmit to ſuch penance as the church ſhould think fit to preſcribe. This miſerable wretch was convicted of Judaiſm, which he had privately practiſed, by connivance, for many years, until he had amaſſed a fortune ſufficient to attract the regard of the church. To this he fell a ſacrifice, and accordingly prepared himſelf for the ſtake; while I, not at all ambitious of the crown of martyrdom, reſolved to temporize: ſo that when I was brought to the queſtion the ſecond time, I made a ſolemn recantation. As I had no worldly fortune to obſtruct my ſalvation, I was received into the boſom of the church, and, by way of penance, enjoined to walk barefoot to Rome, in the habit of a pilgrim.

'During my peregrination through Spain, I was detained as a ſpy, until I could procure credentials from the inquiſition at Liſbon; and behaved with ſuch a reſolution and reſerve, that, after being releaſed, I was deemed a proper perſon to be employed in quality of a ſecret intelligencer at a certain court. This office I undertook without heſitation; and being furniſhed with money and bills of credit, croſſed the Pyrenees, with

intention

inclination to revenge myſelf upon the Spaniards, for the ſeverities I had undergone during my captivity.

'Having therefore effectually diſguiſed myſelf by a change of dreſs, and a large patch on one eye, I hired an equipage, and appeared at Bologna in quality of an itinerant phyſician; in which capacity I ſucceeded tolerably well, till my ſervants decamped in the night with by baggage, and left me in the condition of Adam. In ſhort, I have travelled over the greateſt part of Europe, as a beggar, pilgrim, prieſt, ſoldier, gameſter, and quack; and felt the extremes of indigence and opulence, with the inclemency of weather, in all its viciſſitudes. I have learned that the characters of mankind are every where the ſame; that common ſenſe and honeſty bear an infinitely ſmall proportion to folly and vice; and that life is at beſt a paltry province.

'After having ſuffered innumerable hardſhips, dangers, and diſgraces, I returned to London, where I lived ſome years in a garret, and picked up a ſubſiſtence, ſuch as it was, by vending purges in the ſtreets, from the back of a pied horſe; in which ſituation I uſed to harangue the mob in broken Engliſh, under pretence of being an High-German doctor.

'At laſt an uncle died, by whom I inherit an eſtate of three hundred pounds per annum; though, in his life-time, he would not have parted with a ſixpence to ſave my ſoul and body from perdition.

'I now appear in the world, not as a member of any community, or what is called a ſocial creature; but merely as a ſpectator, who entertains himſelf with the grimaces of a jack-pudding, and banquets his ſpleen in beholding his enemies at loggerheads. That I may enjoy this diſpoſition, abſtracted from all interruption, danger, and participation, I feign myſelf deaf; an expedient by which I not only avoid all diſputes, and their conſequences, but alſo become maſter of a thouſand little ſecrets, which are every day whiſpered in my preſence, without any ſuſpicion of their being over-

hea-

head. You saw how I handled that shallow politician at my Lady Plausible's the other day. The same method I practise upon the crazed Tory, the bigot Whig, the sour supercilious pedant, the petulant critick, the blustering coward, the fawning tool, the pert pimp, sly sharper, and every other species of knaves and fools with which this kingdom abounds.

'In consequence of my rank and character I obtain free admission to the ladies, among whom I have acquired the appellation of the Scandalous Chronicle. As I am considered (while silent) in no other light than that of a foot-stool or elbow-chair, they divest their conversation of all restraint before me, and gratify my sense of hearing with strange things, which (if I could prevail upon myself to give the world that satisfaction) would compose a curious piece of secret history, and exhibit a quite different idea of characters from what is commonly entertained.

'By this time, young gentleman, you may perceive, that I have it in my power to be a valuable correspondent; and that it will be your interest to deserve my confidence.'

Here the misanthrope left off speaking, desirous to know the sentiments of our hero, who embraced the proffered alliance, in a transport of joy and surprize; and the treaty was no sooner concluded, than Mr. Crabtree began to perform articles, by imparting to him a thousand delicious secrets, from the possession of which he promised himself innumerable scenes of mirth and enjoyment. By means of this associate, whom he considered as the ring of Gyges, he foresaw that he should be enabled to penetrate not only into the chambers, but even into the inmost thoughts of the female sex. In order to ward off suspicion, they agreed to revile each other in publick, and meet at a certain private rendezvous, to communicate their mutual discoveries, and concert their future operations.

END OF THE SECOND VOLUME.